



€06801



ENGLISH-RUSSIAN

G R A M M A R





# ENGLISH-RUSSIAN GRAMMAR

OR

## PRINCIPLES

OF THE

## RUSSIAN LANGUAGE

FOR THE USE OF THE ENGLISH

WITH SYNOPTICAL TABLES FOR THE DECLENSIONS AND CONJUGATIONS,  
GRADUATED THEMES OR EXERCISES FOR THE APPLICATION OF THE  
GRAMMATICAL RULES, THE CORRECT CONSTRUCTION OF THESE  
EXERCISES AND THE ACCENTUATION OF ALL THE RUSSIAN WORDS

BY

CH. PH. REIFF

*Fourth Edition carefully revised*

WILLIAMS AND NORGATE,  
14, HENRIETTA STREET, COVENT GARDEN, LONDON;  
AND 20, SOUTH FREDERICK STREET, EDINBURGH.

---

1883.

°  
*for the use of strangers.* This edition, completely remodelled, consists of two parts. The first is the Grammar properly so called, in which I have endeavoured to give the rules with a clearness and precision which may render their retention by the memory easy. The second part consists of *Themes* or graduated *Exercises* on each particular rule, where I have placed the Russian words below the English, to serve as vocabulary. The *solution* or *correct construction* of these Exercises will be found at the end of the Grammar.

In order to render the work as extensively useful as possible to foreigners, I have published it simultaneously in three languages, French, English and German. Philologists who may wish to see the subject treated more in detail, can consult my French translation of the Russian Grammar of Mr GRETSCH, under the title of *Grammaire raisonnée de la Langue russe, précédée d'une Introduction sur l'histoire de cet idiome, de son alphabet et de sa Grammaire*, and published at St-Petersburg in 1829.

CH. R.

Carlsruhe, September 1862.



PUBLISHER'S NOTE  
TO THE FOURTH EDITION

**I**N the Fourth Edition of the English-Russian Grammar of the late CH. REIFF, which we now place before those who wish to acquire, by an easy way, a thorough knowledge of the principles of the Russian language, no changes and alterations have been made. There was no sufficient reason of modifying and remoulding a work, the practical character and admirable arrangement of which have been appreciated by more than one competent judge. The book thus being on the whole and in substance left in its original shape, particular attention could be given to the correctness of the edition both regarding typographical errors and the justness of language.—Great pains have also been taken to render the entrance of the study of Russian more accessive by adopting a phonetic method for the transcription of Russian words in English; in which regard the First Part of the grammar has undergone an entire renovation.

Mr. CHAMIZER-LENOIR, a linguist well-known by his deserving exertions in this province, has committed himself to the task; and this scholar did his best in preparing the work for the press, and in carefully revising the sheets as they passed through the same.

We hope that this handy and neat new edition of a book, which, in spite of some scientific shortcomings, "*has done and still can do real service*", will find the indulgence and patronage of the Public.

We feel at last much indebted to the Oriental Printing-Office of W. DRUGULIN for the excellent getting up and carrying through of this volume.

M. & Co.

# RUSSIAN GRAMMAR

## PART FIRST

### LEXICOLOGY.

I.—THIS *Russian Grammar* is divided into four Division.  
parts, viz:

- I. *Lexicology* (словопроизведе́ние), or words considered as sounds of the human voice and as the elements of speech.
- II. *Syntax* (словосочине́ние), or agreement and construction of words in sentences.
- III. *Orthography* (правописа́ние), or the proper use of letters to represent words.
- IV. *Prosody* (слоγοударе́ние), or *Orthoepy* (правоу́рѣе), i. e. the manner of uttering words with regard to their accentuation.

Sounds  
or Letters:

2.—It being the especial province of this science to explain every thing concerning the knowledge of words, it considers these first of all as mere sounds, and afterwards as the elements of speech. In respect then to mere sounds, words are composed of *letters* (бѹКВЫ); and a collection of these letters or signs representing the particular sounds of which the words of a language are composed, is called *Alphabet* (а́збука).

Alphabet

3.—The Russian Alphabet now in use contains 36 letters, the roman and italic *types* of which, as used in printing, also the *caligraphic characters* or hand-writing, with their modern and ancient *appellation*, and their corresponding *value* of sound, are represented in the following table.

The Russian Alphabet is borrowed from the ecclesiastical Slavonic, which besides contains the following eight letters:

Ѕ Ѧ Ѣ Ѧ Ѧ Ѧ Ѧ Ѧ

called      ѡѡѡ, ѡѡѡ, ѡѡѡ, ѡѡѡ, ѡѡ, ѡѡ, ѡѡѡ, ѡѡѡ for which now  
are substituted ѡ, ѡѡ, ѡѡѡ, ѡѡѡ, ѡѡѡ, ѡѡѡ, ѡѡѡ, ѡѡѡ.

The letter Ѧ has hitherto not been comprised among the number of the letters of the Alphabet; for which reason it is placed at the end of it.—Russian printers have for some time now pretty generally substituted the small capital Т for the common ѡѡѡ, and this Т we have made use of, both in this Grammar and in our Dictionary.

FIRST PART. — *Lexicology.*

RUSSIAN ALPHABET.

Types.		Caligraphic characters.		Appellation.		Value.
<i>roman</i>	<i>italic</i>	<i>Running-hand.</i>	<i>Round-hand.</i>	<i>ancient</i>	<i>modern.</i>	<i>Proper Accidental sound.</i> <i>sound.</i>
1. А а	<i>А а</i>	<i>А а</i>	<i>А, а ω</i>	азъ	а	а е ѓ ( <i>far</i> ) ( <i>met</i> ) ( <i>no</i> )
2. Б б	<i>Б б</i>	<i>Б б</i>	<i>Б б</i>	бѹки	бе	b p
3. В в	<i>В в</i>	<i>В в</i>	<i>В в</i>	вѣди	ве	v f
4. Г г	<i>Г г</i>	<i>Г г</i>	<i>Г г</i>	глаго́лъ	ге	g, gh; k, h, kh, v
5. Д д	<i>Д д</i>	<i>Д д</i>	<i>Д д</i>	добро́	де	d t
6. Е е	<i>Е е</i>	<i>Е е</i>	<i>Е е ѡ</i>	есть	е	ya, a yo, o- ( <i>in yale</i> , ( <i>in yoke</i> , <i>gate</i> ) ( <i>no</i> )
7. Ж ж	<i>Ж ж</i>	<i>Ж ж</i>	<i>Ж ж</i>	живѣте	же	zsh sh
8. З з	<i>З з</i>	<i>З з</i>	<i>З з</i>	земля	зе	z s
9. И и	<i>И и</i>	<i>И и</i>	<i>И и ѡ</i>	иже	и	ee, i ye ( <i>in pen</i> )
10. І і	<i>І і</i>	<i>І і</i>	<i>І і</i>	і (десятерич- ное)		ee, i ( <i>in pen</i> )
11. К к	<i>К к</i>	<i>К к</i>	<i>К к</i>	како	ка	k gh, kh
12. Л л	<i>Л л</i>	<i>Л л</i>	<i>Л л</i>	люди	эль	l, ll
13. М м	<i>М м</i>	<i>М м</i>	<i>М м</i>	мыслѣте	эмъ	m
14. Н н	<i>Н н</i>	<i>Н н</i>	<i>Н н</i>	нашъ	энь	n
15. О о	<i>О о</i>	<i>О о</i>	<i>О о</i>	онъ	ѡ	ō ʒ ( <i>in far</i> )
16. П п	<i>П п</i>	<i>П п</i>	<i>П п</i>	поко́й	пе	p
17. Р р	<i>Р р</i>	<i>Р р</i>	<i>Р р</i>	рцы	эръ	r
18. С с	<i>С с</i>	<i>С с</i>	<i>С с</i>	сло́во	асъ	s, ss z



Types.		Caligraphic characters.		Appellation.		Value.	
roman.	italic.	Round-hand.	Running-hand.	ancient.	modern.	Proper sound.	Accidental sound.
19. Т т	Т т	Т т	Т т	твёрдо	те	t	ѣ
20. У у	У у	У у	У у	у	у	oo, u	(intub)
21. Ф ф	Ф ф	Ф ф	Ф ф	еерть	эфъ	f, ph	
22. Х х	Х х	Х х	Х х	хъръ	ха	kh, ch	
23. Ц ц	Ц ц	Ц ц	Ц ц	цы	це	ts	
24. Ч ч	Ч ч	Ч ч	Ч ч	червь	че	ch, tsh	sh
25. Ш ш	Ш ш	Ш ш	Ш ш	ша		sh	
26. Щ щ	Щ щ	Щ щ	Щ щ	ща		sh-tsh	sh
27. Ъ ъ	Ъ ъ	Ъ ъ	Ъ ъ	ъръ		e mute	
28. Ы ы	Ы ы	Ы ы	Ы ы	ыры		e thick	we
29. Ь ь	Ь ь	Ь ь	Ь ь	ъръ		y mute	
30. Ъ ъ	Ъ ъ	Ъ ъ	Ъ ъ	ять		yah, ā	yo
31. Э э	Э э	Э э	Э э	э		e (in met)	
32. Ю ю	Ю ю	Ю ю	Ю ю	ю		you	u Fr.
33. Я я	Я я	Я я	Я я	я		ya	ye, e (in yard) (in yet, met)
34. Ѳ ѳ	Ѳ ѳ	Ѳ ѳ	Ѳ ѳ	ѳтѳ		f	
35. Ѳ ѳ	Ѳ ѳ	Ѳ ѳ	Ѳ ѳ	ѳница		ee, i (in fin)	
36. Ѳ ѳ	Ѳ ѳ	Ѳ ѳ	Ѳ ѳ	нскраткой		y mute	

## RUSSIAN WRITTEN ALPHABET.

А а Ё ё М м Ш ш  
 Ъ Ѣ Ѥ Ѭ К к У у  
 В в О о Ъ Ѣ  
 Т т П п Л л  
 Д д Р р Ъ Ѣ  
 Е е С с Ъ Ѣ  
 Ж ж М м Ъ Ѣ  
 З з У у Ю ю  
 И и Ф ф Я я  
 Г г Х х О о  
 К к Ц ц Ч ч  
 А а Ъ Ѣ Ч ч Ъ Ѣ

Языкъ Русскій, будучи управленъ дарови  
 нель и вурсаъ Писателя умнаго, мо-  
 жеть равняться нель въ силъ красотъ  
 и пріятности оъ лучшими языками  
 древности и нашихъ временъ.

Division of  
the letters.

4.—The 36 letters of the Russian alphabet contain 12 *vowels* (гласныя), viz: а, е, и, і, о, у, ы, ъ, э, ю, я, ѳ, of which the following five: е, ъ, я, ю, ы, may be called *diphthongs* (двугласныя); 3 *semi-vowels* (полу-гласныя): ѳ, ѱ, Ѵ, and 21 *consonants* (согласныя), viz: б, в, г, д, ж, з, к, л, м, н, п, р, с, т, ф, х, ц, ч, ш, щ, ѿ.

5.—The vowels and semi-vowels, with regard to their sounds, are *hard*, *soft* or *moderate*; and the consonants, according to their degree of intensity, are *strong*, *feeble* or *liquid*, viz:

I. VOWELS.		III. CONSONANTS.	
I. <i>Hard</i> : {and those cor- responding }	2. <i>Soft</i> :	I. <i>Strong</i> : {and those cor- responding }	2. <i>Feeble</i> :
а . . . . .	я	п . . . . .	б
э . . . . .	е	ф . . . . .	в
ы . . . . .	ѣ, і	к . . . . .	г ( <i>g lat.</i> )
о . . . . .	ѓ (іо)	х . . . . .	г ( <i>h lat.</i> )
у . . . . .	ю	ш . . . . .	ж
3. <i>Moderate</i> :		т . . . . .	д
ѳ.		с . . . . .	з
II. SEMI-VOWELS.		ц (тс) . (дз)	These three have no sign of their own.
I. <i>Hard</i> : {and those cor- responding }	2. <i>Soft</i> :	ч (тш) . (дж)	
ѳ . . . . .	ѳ, Ѵ	щ (штш) (ждаж)	
		3. <i>Liquid</i> .	
		л, м, н, р.	

6.—According to the particular organ of speech which gives utterance to the consonants, they are divided into:

1. *Gutturals* (гортанныя), pronounced in the throat:  
г, к, х.
2. *Palatals* (поднёбныя), uttered by the palate:  
л, н, р.
3. *Dentals* (зубныя), sounded by the aid of and against the teeth: д, т.

4. *Lingual* (язычная), articulated by means of applying the tongue closely to the upper teeth: л.
5. *Labials* (губныя), produced between the lips: б, в, м, п, ф.
6. *Lispings* (шепелеватыя), produced by a whistling of the tongue against the palate: з, с.
7. *Hissings* (шипящія), sounded by a whistling of the tongue against the root of the lower teeth: ж, ч, ш, щ.

The vowel *у* and the consonant *ѳ* have not been included in the divisions, being found only in a few words taken from the Greek, and the former, with regard to pronunciation, being identical with *и*, and the latter with *ѱ*.

7.—In the foregoing table of the letters we have pointed out their *proper* and *accidental sounds*; the proper sound being the one they usually have, or when used separately, whereas they receive their accidental sound from a particular situation. This accidental sound, and more especially with regard to the vowels, depends upon the *tonic accent* (ударѣніе), of which more hereafter (§ 12).

Pronunciation of the letters.

The rules we are about to give of the pronunciation of the Russian letters, are taken from the dialect of Great-Russia, such as it is spoken at the Court, among the polished and literary world. Other dialects of the Russian tongue are those of Little-Russia, White-Russia, Novgorod, Soozdal and that of Olonetz; all of which however differ not more materially from the Moscovite dialect, than by their pronunciation and the use of some particular expressions.

8.—The vowels, in the Russian language, are differently pronounced according to the place they occupy in a word, or as they are accented or not.

Vowels.

А, а.	Proper sound,	{ а (in <i>fat</i> ): азбука, <i>alphabet</i> ; каша, <i>oat-meal</i> .
	Accidental sound,	{ е (in <i>pen</i> ): ужасъ, <i>dread</i> ; часы, <i>watch</i> ; лошадь, <i>horse</i> . о (in <i>go</i> ): большаго, <i>great</i> ; худо, <i>bad</i> .

• This vowel *a* is pronounced as *ah* or *a* (in *fat*); but: 1) It has the sound of short *e* after the hissing consonants (ж, ч, ш, щ) in the middle of a word, when not accented; at the end of words however, whether accented or not, it retains its proper sound.—2) In the termination *aro* of the genitive of adjectives, when accented, it has the sound of long *o*. Thus the above words are pronounced: *àhzbòoka*, *kàhsha*, *òòzshess*, *tshesseè*, *lòhshad*, *bahlshòhva*, *khudòhva*.

Я, я.	Proper sound,	{ яа (in <i>yard</i> ): яма, <i>ditch</i> ; мясо, <i>meat</i> ; земля, <i>earth</i> .
	Accidental sound,	{ ye, e (in <i>ya</i> ): ядро, <i>kernel</i> ; дёвять, <i>nine</i> .

The vowel *я*, when accented, has the sound of the diphthong *yah* (*yàhma*, *myàhso*, *zèmtlyah*); but if not accented, it is pronounced *ye* (in *yap*) at the beginning of words and syllables, and *e* (in *get*) after a consonant (*yadrò*, *dàvet*). At the end of words, whether accented or not, it preserves its proper sound; thus *заря*, *dawn*; *время*, *time*, are pronounced *zaryàh*, *vraìmyah*. The pronoun *ея*, *of her*, is pronounced *yayòh*, and the syllable *ся* of pronominal verbs is pronounced *sah* as: *стараться*, *to exert one's self* (*stahràhtsah*).

Е, е.	Proper sound,	{ ya, a (in <i>yate, gate</i> ) единъ, <i>one</i> ; сiè, <i>this</i> ; сердце, <i>heart</i> .
	Accidental sound,	{ yo, o (in <i>yoke</i> ): берёза, <i>birch-tree</i> ; жёлтый, <i>yellow</i> .

At the beginning of words and syllables the vowel *e* is pronounced *yai*, but after a consonant purely as long *a* or short *e*; the above words therefore are pronounced *yaideèn*, *seeyaiè*, *saixtse*. This vowel, when accented, sounds like *yo* (in *yoke*), or, after a hissing and the lingual consonant (ж, ч, ш, щ, ц), like *oh* in the following cases, viz: 1) when standing before a consonant followed by one of the hard vowels, *a*, *o*, *y*, *ы*, *э*; 2) at the end of words; 3) in the termination *ею* or *еѹ* of the instrumental singular case of feminine nouns; 4) before the gutturals (г, к, х) or the simple hissing sounds (ж, ш), which do not allow of a hard vowel after them; 5) in the present tense of verbs, although followed by a soft vowel. Thus the words *ёлка*, *fir*; *слёзы*, *tears*; *лёдъ*, *ice*; *житьё*, *life*; *моё*, *my*; *землёю*, *by the earth*; *далёкій*, *distant*; *несёшь*, *thou carriest*; *несёте*, *you carry*; *шелкъ*, *silk*; *лицё*, *face*; *душёю*, *with the soul*, are pronounced *yòlka*, *slyòzee*, *lyot*, *zsheetyò*, *mah-yò*, *zamlýòyou*, *dalyòkee*, *nessyòsh*, *nessyòtai*, *shòlk*, *leetsò*, *dooshòyou*. It is this pronunciation *yo* or *o* that it is customary now to point out by a diæresis over the vowel *e*; *берёза*, *жёлтый*, *ёлка*, &c., and in this manner it has been distinguished, throughout this Grammar. This vowel *e* serves besides to give the French pronunciation of *eu*, as in *Монтескьё* (*Fr. Montesquieu*).

Ѣ, ѣ.	{	Proper sound,	{	ya, a (in <i>yate</i> , <i>gate</i> ): <i>ѣмъ</i> , <i>I eat</i> ; <i>ѣвра</i> , <i>faith</i>
		Accidental sound,	{	yo (in <i>yoke</i> ): <i>гнѣзда</i> , <i>nests</i> ; <i>звѣзды</i> , <i>stars</i> .

• This vowel *н* at the beginning of words and syllables sounds like *yai*; but after a consonant like long *a* or short *e* (*yaim*, *vaira*). However after the consonant *н*

the diphthongal sound is felt rather stronger; thus **нѣтъ**, *no*; **нѣмѡй**, *dumb*, are pronounced *nyet*, *nyamòy*. When accented, this vowel has the sound of *yoh* only in the words **гнѣзда**, *nests*; **звѣзды**, *stars*; **сѣдла**, *saddles*; **цвѣтъ**, *he flourished*; **обрѣтъ**, *he found*; also in their derivatives and compounds, as: **звѣздочка**, *little star*; **гнѣздышко**, *little nest*; **разцвѣтъ**, *it bloomed*; which are pronounced *gnyòhzda*, *zvyòhzdee*, *syòhdla*, *tsvyòll*, *ahbryòll*, *zvyòhzdotshka*, *gnyòhzdishko*, *rahztsvyòll*.

О, о. { Proper sound, о: **дѡма**, *at home*; **пѡслѣ**, *after*.  
Accidental sound, ah: **хорѡшѡ**, *well*; **колоколѣ**, *bells*.

The vowel *o*, when accented, keeps its proper sound; but if unaccented, it takes the sound of *ah*; wherefore the above words are pronounced *dòma*, *pòslai*, *kharahshòh*, *kalakalàh*. It must be observed however, that after an accented syllable, the sound of that vowel is extremely short; thus the word **кѡлоколѣ**, *bell*, is pronounced *kòhlokol* or *kòhl'k'l*.

И, и. { Proper sound, ee: **итти**, *to go*; **мирѣ**, *peace*.  
Accidental sound, yee: **имѣ**, *to them*; **статьи**, *articles*.

The vowel *u*, at the beginning of the various inflections of the pronoun of the third person (**имѣ**, **ихѣ**, **ими**), and after the semi-vowel *ь*, is pronounced as a diphthong, *yeeet*, *yeeemee*, *yeeekh*, *stahtyeeè*. But in every other instance it preserves its proper sound, only that after a preposition terminating with the semi-vowel *ъ*, it takes the thick sound of *ы*, thus the words **въ избѣ**, *in the room*; **съ Иваномѣ**, *with John*; **предыдущий**, *precedent*, are pronounced as if written **вызбы**, **сываномы**, **предыдущий**.

Ы, ы. { Proper sound, e thick: **сынѣ**, *son*; **льстецы**, *flatterers*.  
Accidental sound, we: **грибы**, *mushrooms*; **мы**, *we*.

The sound of this vowel *u* is a thick utterance of *o*, and to get any thing like a perfect idea of this sound, it is necessary to hear it from the mouth of a Russian. After the labials (б, в, м, п, ф) it sounds very nearly like *we* pronounced very short; thus the words грибы, *mushrooms*; вы, *you*; мы, *we*; снопы, *sheaves*; шкафы, *cupboards*, are pronounced *grebwe*, *vwe*, *mwe*, *snarwe*, *sh'kafwe*. The Polish language represents this sound by the letter *y*.

Ю, ю. { Proper sound, you, long *u*: югъ, *south*; люблю, *I love*.  
Accidental sound, u French: Брюссель, *Brussels*.

This vowel *ю* has properly the diphthongal sound *you* or long *u*; wherefore the pronounciation of the above words is *youk*, *lyoublyou*. In foreign words only it takes the place of the French *u*, as in the word Брюссель, *Brussels* (Fr. *Bruxelles*.)

И, и, У, у, Э, э, V, v.—These four vowels, whether accented or not, always keep their proper sound, as in the words иерей, *priest*; миръ, *the world*; ужинъ, *supper*; пагуба, *loss*; это́тъ, *this*; мѣро, *holy christ*, which are pronounced *yerèy*, *meer*, *oòzsheen*, *pàhgoobah*, *aitot*, *meèro*. For the use of *i* and *v* (instead of *u*) see Orthography.

9.—The semi-vowels (ъ, ь, ѣ), which are placed, the two first after the consonants, and the last after the vowels, are only half uttered vowels, *ъ* being half of the vowel *o*, and *ь* or *ѣ* half of the vowel *u*. Semi-vowels.

Ъ, ь, Ъ, ѣ.—The hard semi-vowel *ъ* entails on the consonant that precedes it, a strong and harsh sound, as though that letter was double, and has even the effect of causing a feeble consonant to be pronounced like its strong corresponding sound;



thus the words: *станѣ*, *shape*; *вязѣ*, *elm-tree*; *шесть*, *perch*; *кровѣ*, *roof*; *столѣ*, *table*; *братѣ*, *brother*; *пылѣ*, *flame*; *гусарѣ*, *hussar*; *обѣ*, *from*; *гладѣ*, *hunger*; *семѣ*, *this*; *цѣпѣ*, *flail*, are pronounced *stann*, *vyass*, *shesst*, *krohff*, *stoll*, *brahtt*, *peel*, *goosàrr*, *ohpp*, *glahtt*, *semm*, *tsepp*. On the other hand, the soft semi-vowel *ѣ* confers a liquifying (*Fr. mouillé*) and slender sound on the preceding consonant; thus the words: *станѣ*, *become*, *вязѣ*, *marsh*; *шесть*, *six*; *кровѣ*, *blood*; *столѣ*, *so much*; *братѣ*, *to take*; *пылѣ*, *dust*; *гусарѣ*, *goose-herd*; *Обѣ*, *the Obi*; *гладѣ*, *smoth road*; *семѣ*, *seven*; *цѣпѣ*, *chain*, are pronounced *stahn'* (like *gn* in the French *Allemagne*), *vyaz'*, *shesst'*, *krov'*, *stohl'*, *braht'*, *peel'*, *goosàr'*, *ohb'*, *glàd'*, *sem'*, *tsep'*, by causing the *i* to be slightly vibrated and to expire, as it were, within the mouth; the sound and the mechanism for producing it, being closely allied to what is heard in the French words *péril*, *soleil*, *campagne*, *cigogne*, *ligne*. After the hissing consonants (*ж, ч, ш, щ*) the sounds of the semi-vowels *ѣ* and *ѣ* are the same and differ in nothing from each other; thus the words *ножѣ*, *knife*, and *рожѣ*, *rye*; *мечѣ*, *sword*, and *сѣчѣ*, *to cut*; *камышѣ*, *reed*, and *мышѣ*, *mouse*; *тощѣ*, *fasting*, and *нощѣ*, *night*. are pronounced *nohsh* and *rohsh*, *metch* and *setch*, *kahmeesh* and *meesh*, *tohsh'tsh* and *nohsh'tsh*.

**Й, ѣ.**—The soft semi-vowel *ѣ* is pronounced very rapidly and short along with the vowel that precedes it, and with which it formes but one syllable; thus the words *дай*, *give*; *пей*, *drink*; *мой*, *my*; *жуй*, *chew*; *вѣй*, *blow*; *карий*, *brownbay*, are pro-

nounced *da'*, or like *di* in *die*, *pe'*, *mo'*, *zshu'*, *va'*, *kare'*, givin gutterance to a short *i* after the vowel.

10.—The consonants, in the Russian language, Consonants. as will be seen below, have also various sounds, viz:

Б, б.	} Proper sound,	} Accidental sound,	<i>b</i> : баба, <i>old woman</i> ; бобъ, <i>bean</i> ; бабка, <i>cockle</i> .
В, в.			<i>v</i> : вонъ, <i>away</i> ; ровъ, <i>ditch</i> ; вторникъ, <i>Tuesday</i> .
Д, д.			<i>t</i> : дно, <i>bottom</i> ; родъ, <i>kind</i> ; водка, <i>brandy</i> .
Ж, ж.			<i>sh</i> : жду, <i>I wait</i> ; мужъ, <i>husband</i> ; ложка, <i>spoon</i> .
З, з.			<i>s</i> : звонъ, <i>sound</i> ; глазъ, <i>eye</i> ; сказка, <i>story</i> .

The feeble consonants б, в, д, ж, з, retain their proper sound before the vowels, before the liquid and other feeble consonants, observing that ж (French *j*) is now represented in English by *zsh*. But before the strong consonants and at the end of words terminating in the hard semi-vowel (ъ), they assume the utterance of their corresponding strong letters (п, ф, т, ш, с). Thus the above words are pronounced *bàbah*, *bohph*, *bàphka*, *vohnny*, *rohff*, *ftòhrneek*, *dno*, *rott*, *vòhtkah*, *zsh'doo*, *moosh*, *òhshkah*, *zvonn*, *glahss*, *skàska*. In words where зд is followed by н, the letter д is silent: thus поздно, *late*; праздникъ, *feast*, are pronounced *pòhznò*, *pràhznèek*. The word дождикъ, *rain*, is pronounced *dòhzsh'zsheek*.

Г, г.	{	Proper sound, <i>g gh</i> : горá, <i>mountain</i> ; погибелъ, <i>perdition</i> .	
		{	Accidental sound,
			<i>k</i> : другъ, <i>friend</i> ; могущій, <i>who could</i> .
			<i>h</i> : Господъ, <i>Lord</i> ; Бóга, <i>of God</i> .
			<i>kh</i> , <i>ch</i> : Богъ, <i>God</i> ; легкiй, <i>light</i> .
			<i>v</i> : краснаго, <i>red</i> ; егó, <i>of him</i> .

In the beginning and in the middle of words the consonant *z* preserves its proper sound, being articulated with a slight vocalized aspiration, something like the Hibernian *g* when pronounced hard (*gharàh*,

The compound consonant *ш* (штш), which has the three distinct sounds of *sh-t-sh* or *s-t-sh*, and which the Poles represent by *szcz*, has the simple sound of *ш* before the consonant *н*; the above words consequently are pronounced *sh'tshitt*, or *stchitt*, *òhvosh'tsh*, and *akhvahshnòy*, *fahmòhshnik*.

П, п.	}	. . . . .	{	р: павлинъ, <i>pea-cock</i> ; столпъ, <i>column</i> .
Ф, ф.				ф or ph: фонарь, <i>lantern</i> ; скуфья, <i>scull-cap</i> .
Х, х.	}	. . . . .	{	kh, Germ. ch: храмъ, <i>temple</i> ; духъ, <i>odour</i> .
Ш, ш.				sh, Fr. ch, Germ. sch, Pol. sz: шалашъ, <i>cottage</i> .
Ц, ц.	}	. . . . .	{	ts, Germ. z: царь, <i>king</i> ; перецъ, <i>pepper</i> .
Ө, ө.				f: театръ, <i>theatre</i> ; Аѳины, <i>Athens</i> .

Thesesix strong consonants keep their proper sound, and consequently the above words are pronounced *pa-vleèn*, *stohlp*, *fahnàr*, *schoofyà*, *khrahmm*, *dookh*, *shah-làsh*, *tsar*, *pàhrets*, *fe-àht'r*, *afeènee*, observing that *x* is pronounced as in the Scotch *loch* or German *Quach*. For the use of the consonant *ө*, which is pronounced the same as *ф*, see Orthography.

Л, л.	}	. . . . .	{	l: ладъ, <i>accord</i> ; лядъ, <i>ill-luck</i> .
М, м.				m: всемъ, <i>to all</i> ; вóсемъ, <i>eight</i> .
Н, н.				n: троңъ, <i>throne</i> ; тронъ, <i>touch</i> .
Р, р.				r: радъ, <i>glad</i> ; рядъ, <i>rank</i> .

The liquid consonants preserve their proper sound, being strong or soft in their utterance according to the vowel or semi-vowel that follows; consequently the above words are pronounced *latt* and *lyat*, *vsaimm* and *vòhsem*; *trohnn* and *tron'*; *rahtt* and *ryahtt*. It is necessary to observe here that the Russian consonant *л*, before the hard vowels and strong con-

sonants, by no means resembles the usual English *l*, in as much as in that situation it is pronounced with much greater force, and which is obtained by a strong pressure of the tongue against the upper teeth. The Poles represent this sound by *ł* with a bar (*ł*). The other three sounds correspond with those of the English language, only that the *p* has a stronger trill, partaking more of the Irish utterance of this letter.

11.—A vowel, either by itself, or joined to one or more consonants, with or without a semi-vowel, forms, in the Russian language, a *syllable* (сло́гъ, складъ); and one or several of these, used to represent a thought or sensation, form a word (сло́во). Words consequently may be *monosyllables* (одно-сло́жныя) or *polysyllables* (многосло́жныя), according to their being compounded of one or more syllables, as: я, *and*; я, *I*; онъ, *he*; аѣ, *ah*; сей, *this*; два, *two*; страхъ, *fright*; зи-ма́, *winter*; до-ро́-га, *road*; до-бро-дѣ-тель, *virtue*; до-бро-дѣ-тель-ный, *virtuous*, &c.

Syllable  
and word

The Russian language contains a few words that have no vowel at all, or whose vowel has changed into a semi-vowel; such are the particles въ, къ, съ, бѣ, жѣ, лѣ (instead of *eo*, *ko*, *so*, *by*, *me*, *lu*). These words, called *assyllables* (безсло́жныя), are joined to the syllables of the preceding or following word, as: въ домъ, *in the house*; къ окнѣ, *towards the window*; съ тобою, *with thee*; если бѣ, *if*; однако жѣ, *however*; точно лѣ, *is it right so?*

12.—In polysyllabic words there is always one syllable that experiences a greater stress of the voice than the rest; thus in the words ма́ло, *little*; го-то́во, *ready*; гово́рите, *speak*, the syllables ма, то, ри, are more discernably audible than the syllables

Tonic  
accent.

*lo, 2o, 6o, me.* This modification of the voice is in fact what is meant by *tonic accent* (ударѣніе), and is indicated by a little mark over the vowel. The accented syllable is called *long* (дѳлгій), the others *short* (крѳткіе).

The accent is no longer printed in Russian books, except to distinguish some homonymous words and grammatical inflections of similar forms, as замѳкъ, *castle*, and замѳкъ, *lock*; слѳва, *of the word* (gen. sing.), and слѳва, *words* (nomin. plur.), as will be seen in Part IV, Prosody. It is here the place to observe that in the Russian language there is no rule by which to determine the accent, and that in one and the same word is it frequently shifted from one syllable to another; for which reason all the words used in this Grammar are printed with the accent they ought to have.

The following *Reading-exercise*, in which the reading of the Russian text is facilitated by an imitation of the sounds according to English utterance, and an interlinear literal translation added, it is confidentially hoped, will materially assist the learner to make himself master of the rules we have given on the pronunciation of the letters and words of the Russian language.

### READING-EXERCISE.

Вчерѳ	въ	шестѳ	часѳвъ	ўтра	поўхали	мы
Ftshera	f	shest	tshessoff	ootra	pah-yaikhalee	mwe
Yesterday	at	six	o'clock	of the morning	went	we

верхѳмъ	въ	Пѳтсдамъ.	Ничегѳ	нѳтъ	скучнѳе	ѳтой
verkhomm	f	Potsdam	Neetshaivo	nyet	skooshnaiyai	altoy
on horseback	to	Potsdam.	Nothing	there is	duller	than this

дорѳги:	вездѳ	глубѳкій	песѳкъ,	и	ни	какихѳ	занимѳтель-
fahroghee:	vezdai	gloobohkee	pessok,	ee	neekahkeekh	zaneemahel-	
road:	every where	a deep	sand,	and not	any	interest-	

нѳхѳ	предмѳтовъ	въ	глазѳ	не	попадѳется.	Но	видѳ
neekh	praidmaltoff	v'	glahzah	nai	pahpahdayetsah.	No	veet
ing	object	to	the eyes	not	presents itself.	But	the sight

Пóтсдама, а особлѣво Санъ-Сусѣ, очѣнь хорóшѣ. Мы  
 Potsdahmah, ah ahsahbleévo San-Sooosée, ótshain kharòsh. Mwe  
*of Potsdam, and above all of Sans-Souci, (is) very fine. We*

остановѣлись въ трактѣрѣ, не доѣзжая до городскѣхъ воротъ.  
 ahstahnahveélees f' trakteéra, nau da-yaizsh 'zshàyah da garadskeekh vahrot.  
*stopped at the hotel, not arriving to, the city- gates.*

Отдохну́въ и заказавъ обѣдъ, мы пошлѣ въ  
 Addakhnoov ee zakazahv ahbyaid, mwe pashlee v'  
*Having rested ourselves and ordered a dinner, we went into*

гóродъ. У воротъ записали на́ши именá. На парáдномъ  
 gorot. oo varot zahpeesahlee nashee eemannah. Nah parahdnom  
*the town. At the gates one wrote our names. On the parade-*

мѣстѣ протѣвъ дворца, учѣлась гв́ардія: прѣкрáсныє  
 maistai prohteef dvahrtsah, ootslæelahs gvahrdyah praikrahsnéeyai  
*place opposite the palace, exercised the guards: very fine*

лю́ди, прѣкрáсныє му́ндрѣ! Видѣ́ дворца́ со  
 lyoudee, praikrahsnéeyai moondeeree' Veed dvahrtsah sah  
*men, superb uniforms! The sight of the palace from*

сторóны сáда очѣнь хорóшѣ. Гóродъ, вооб́щѣ  
 starahneé sahda otshain kharosh. Ghorod vah-ahbstshai  
*the side of the garden (is) very fine. The town in general*

прѣкрáсно вы́строєнъ; въ большóй ўлицѣ́ мнóго  
 praikrahсно vwestroyain, v' bahlshoy ooleetsai mnogo  
*(is) well built; in the great street (there are) many*

великолѣ́пныхъ до́мовъ, стрóєнныхъ отча́сти по образцѣ́  
 vaileekahlapneekh dahmòf, stroyanneekh attshahstee pah ahbrahtsoo  
*of magnificent houses, built partly on the model*

огрóмнѣйшихъ рѣ́мскихъ пала́тъ и на со́бственныя де́ньги  
 agtromneysheekh reemskeekh pahlaht ee na sòbstvainnéeyah déynghee  
*of the vastest Roman palaces and at the own expences*

поко́йнаго коро́ля: онъ да́рилъ ихъ, кому́ хотѣ́лъ. Тепѣ́рь  
 rakòynahvah kahrlyah on dareel yeeekh, kamoo khahtail. Taiper  
*of the late king: he gave them, to whom he chose. Now*

сѣи \* огромныя зданія пусты, или занимаются  
seeeyè agròmneeyah zdáhneeyah poóstee, eeleè zaneemàhyootsah  
the vast edifices (are) empty, or are occupied

солдатами. — Въ Потсдамѣ есть русская церковь подъ  
sahldàhtamee. — F' Pòtsdahmai yest roòskayah tsairkov pahd  
by soldiers. — At Potsdam there is a Russian church under

надзираниемъ стараго русскаго солдата, который живётъ  
nahdzeeráhneeyem starahvah rooskahvah sahldàtah, kahtoree zsheev'yòtt  
the care of an old Russian soldier, who lives

тамъ со времёнъ царствования Императрицы Анны. Мы  
tahm sah vraimain tsàrstvovaneeyah eemperatreetsee àhnnee. Mwe  
there since the times of the reign of the empress Anne. We

насилу могли сыскать его. Дряхлый старикъ  
nahseèloo maghleè seeskaht yaivo. Dr'yàkhloe stahreèk  
with difficulty could find him. The decrepit old man

сидѣлъ на большихъ креслахъ, и услышавъ, что  
seedail na bahlshetèkh kreslahkh, ee oosleeshahv shito  
was sitting in a large arm-chair, and having heard that

мы Русскіе, протянулъ къ намъ руки, и  
mwe rooskeeyai, prahtyahnool k' nahm rookee. ee  
we (are) Russians, he extended towards us the hands, and

дрожащимъ голосомъ сказалъ: Слава Бѣгу! Слава Бѣгу!  
drahzhàstsheem golossom skahzahl: slava Bohoo! slàvah Bohoo!  
with a trembling voice he said: Glory to God! Glory to God!

Онъ хотѣлъ говорить сперва съ нами по-русски: но мы  
ohn khahtail gahvahreèt spervah s' nàhme pah-rooskee: no mwe  
He wanted to speak at first with us in Russian: but we

съ трудомъ могли разумѣть другъ друга. Намъ надлежало  
s' troodòm mahgleè rahzoomait droog droogah. Nam nahdlaizshàhlo  
with difficulty could understand each other. To us it was obliged

повторять почти каждое слово. „Пойдѣмте въ церковь  
pahvtahryàht pahstheetè kàzhdayai slovo. „Pie-dyòmtai f' tsairkov  
to repeat almost each word. „Let us go into the church

Божію, сказа́лъ онъ, и помо́лимся вмѣстѣ, хот́я ны́нѣ  
 Bòzsheeyou, skahzáhl on, ee pahmòhleemsa vmaistai, khahtyáhl neénai  
*of God, said he, and let us pray together, although to-day*

и нѣтъ праздника. Сѣрдце моё наполнилось  
 ee n'yet prázneekah. "Sairtse mah-yòh napòhlneelos  
*even there is not any holiday. Heart my filled itself*

благоговѣніемъ, когда отворилась дверь въ церковь,  
 blahaghavaineeyaim, kaghdá ahtvareelas dvair f' tsairkov,  
*with devotion, when opened itself the door into the church,*

гдѣ столько времени царствуетъ глубокое молчаніе,  
 ghdyai stòlko vrainainee tsàrstvooyet gloobokoyai mahltshàneeyai.  
*where so much of time reigns a profound silence,*

едва перерываемое слабыми вздохами и тихимъ голосомъ  
 yaidváh perereevâyaimoyai slàhbemee vzdohkhammee ee teekheem ghòlossom  
*hardly interrupted by the feeble groans and the soft voice*

старца, который по воскресеньямъ приходитъ туда читать  
 stàrtsah, kahtooree pah vahskraisainyahm preekhohdeet toodah tsheetàht  
*of old man, who on the sundays comes there to read*

святѣйшую изъ книгъ, приготовляющую его къ  
 svyahtéyshooyou eez kneegh, preegahtahvlyâyoustshooyou yaivoh k'  
*the most holy of the books, preparing him to*

блаженной вѣчности. Въ церкви всё чисто. Церковныя  
 blahzhainnoy valtsnostee. F' tsairkvee fsyo tsheetsto. Tsairkovneeyah  
*the happy eternity. In the church all (is) clean. Church-*

книги и утварь хранятся въ сундукѣ. Отъ времени до  
 kneeghee ee oòtvahr khrahnyàtsah f' soondookai. Aht vrainenee doh  
*books and ornaments are kept in a trunk. From time to*

времени старикъ перебираетъ ихъ съ молитвою. „Часто  
 vrainainee stahreèk perebeeràyait yeeekh s' mahleètvoyou. „Tshàsto  
*time the old man arranges them with prayer. „Often*

отъ всего сердца, сказа́лъ онъ, сокрушаюсь я о томъ, что  
 aht fsaivò sairtsah, skahzáhl on, sahkreoshâyous yah ah tomm, shto  
*from all the heart, said he, grieve myself I of that, that*



сѣи "огромныя зданія пусты, или занимаются  
 seeeyè agròmneeyah zdàhneeyah poòstee, eelee zaneemàhyootsah  
 the vast edifices (are) empty, or are occupied

солдатами. — Въ Потсдамѣ есть русская церковь подъ  
 sahldàhtamee. — F' Pòtsdahmai yest roòskayah tsairkov pahd  
 by soldiers. — At Potsdam there is a Russian church under

надзираниемъ стараго русскаго солдата, который живётъ  
 nahdzeeràhneeyem stàrahvah rooskahvah sahldatah, kahtoree zsheev'yott  
 the care of an old Russian soldier, who lives

тамъ со времёнъ царствованія Императрицы Анны. Мы  
 tahn sah vraimain tsarstvovaneeyah eemperatreètsee àhnnee. Mwe  
 there since the times of the reign of the empress Anne. We

насилу могли сыскать его. Дряхлый старикъ  
 nahseèloo maghleè seeskaht, yaivo. Dr'yàkhlee stahreèk  
 with difficulty could find him. The decrepit old man

сидѣлъ на большихъ креслахъ, и услышавъ, что  
 seeditail na bahlsheèkh krèslahkh, ee oosleèshahv shito  
 was sitting in a large arm-chair, and having heard that

мы Русские, протянулъ къ намъ руки, и  
 mwe rooskeeyai, prahtyahnool k' nahm rookee, ee  
 we (are) Russians, he extended towards us the hands, and

дрожащимъ голосомъ сказа́лъ: Сла́ва Бо́гу! Сла́ва Бо́гу!  
 drahzshàstsheem golossom skahzáhl: slavah Bohoo! slàvah Bohoo!  
 with a trembling voice he said: Glory to God! Glory to God!

Онъ хотѣлъ говорить сперва съ нами по-русски: но мы  
 ohn khahtail gahvahreèt spervah s' nàhme pah-rooskee: no mwe  
 He wanted to speak at first with us in Russian: but we

съ трудомъ могли разумѣть другъ друга. Намъ надлежало  
 s' troodòm mahgleè rahzoomait droog droogah. Nam nahdlaizshàhlo  
 with difficulty could understand each other. To us it was obliged

повторять почти каждое слово. „Пойдѣмте въ церковь  
 pahvtahryàht pahstheè kàzhdoyai slovo. „Pie-dyòmtai f' tsairkov  
 to repeat almost each word. „Let us go into the church

БОЖІЮ, СКАЗАЛЪ ОНЪ, И ПОМОЛИМСЯ ВМѢСТѢ, ХОТЯ НЫНѢ  
 Bôzsheeyou, skahzâhl on, ee rahmôhleemsa vmaistai, khahtyâh neēnai  
*of God, said he, and let us pray together, although to-day*

И НѢТЪ ПРАЗНИКА.“ СЕРДЦЕ МОЁ НАПОЛНИЛОСЬ  
 ee n'yet prázneekah.“ Sairtse mah-yoh napôhlnceelos  
*even there is not any holiday.“ Heart my filled itself*

БЛАГОГОВѢНІЕМЪ, КОГДА ОТВОРИЛАСЬ ДВЕРЬ ВЪ ЦѢРКОВЬ,  
 blahagahvaineeyaim, kaghda ahtvareēlas dvair f' tsairkov,  
*with devotion, when opened itself the door into the church,*

ГДѢ СТОЛЬКО ВРЕМЕНИ ЦАРСТВУЕТЪ ГЛУБОКОЕ МОЛЧАНІЕ,  
 ghdyai stolko vramainee tsarstvooyet gloobokoyai mahltshaneeyai.  
*where so much of time reigns a profound silence,*

ЕДВА ПЕРЕРЫВАЕМОЕ СЛАБЫМИ ВЗДÔХАМИ И ТИХИМЪ ГОЛОСОМЪ  
 yaidvâh pererevayaimoyai slahbemeē vzdohkhahmee ee teekheem gholossom  
*hardly interrupted by the feeble groans and the soft voice*

СТАРЦА, КОТОРЫЙ ПО ВОСКРЕСѢНІЯМЪ ПРИХОДИТЬ ТУДА ЧИТАТЬ  
 startsah, kahtohree pah vahskraisainyahm preekhohdeet toodah tsheetaht  
*of old man, who on the sundays comes there to read*

СВЯТѢЙШУЮ ИЗЪ КНИГЪ, ПРИГOTOВЛЯЮЩУЮ ЕГО КЪ  
 svyahteyshooyou eez kneegh, preegahtahvliyayoustshooyou yavoh k'  
*the most holy of the books, preparing him to*

БЛАЖЕННОЙ ВѢЧНОСТИ. ВЪ ЦѢРКВИ ВСЁ ЧИСТО. ЦЕРКОВНЫЯ  
 blahzshainnoy vaitshnostee. F' tsairkvee fsyo tsheesto. Tsarkovneeyah  
*the happy eternity. In the church all (is) clean. Church-*

КНИГИ И УТВАРЬ ХРАНЯТСЯ ВЪ СУНДУКѢ. ОТЪ ВРЕМЕНИ ДО  
 kneeghee ee ootvahr khrahnyatsah f' soondookai. Aht vrameneē doh  
*books and ornaments are kept in a trunk. From time to*

ВРЕМЕНИ СТАРИКЪ ПЕРЕБИРАЕТЪ ИХЪ СЪ МОЛИТВОЮ. „ЧАСТО  
 vramainee stahreēk perebeerayait yeeekh s' mahleetvoyou. „Tshasto  
*time the old man arranges them with prayer. „Often*

ОТЪ ВСЕГО СЕРДЦА, СКАЗАЛЪ ОНЪ, СОКРУШАЮСЬ Я О ТОМЪ, ЧТО  
 aht fsarvô sairtsah, skahzâhl on, sahkrooshâyous yah ah tomm, shto  
*from all the heart, said he, grieve myself I of that, that*

ПО СМЕРТИ МОЕЙ, КОТОРАЯ ОТЪ МЕНЯ КОНЕЧНО УЖЕ НЕ  
 pah smairtee mah-yèy, kahtorayah aht mainyàh kahnalshno oozshai nai  
*after death my, which from me certainly already not (is)*

ДАЛЕКО, НЕ КОМУ БУДЕТЬ СМОТРѢТЬ ЗА ЦЕРКОВЬЮ.“ — СЪ  
 dahlyohko, nai kahmoo boodait shmahtrait zah tsairkovyuu.“ — S  
*far, no person will watch over the church.“ — During*

ПОЛЧАСА ПРОБЫЛИ МЫ ВЪ СЕМЪ СВЯЩЕННОМЪ МѢСТѢ,  
 poltshahsa probwelee mwę f' saim svyahststshainnom malstai,  
*half an hour remained we in this holy spot,*

ПРОСТИЛИСЬ СЪ ПОЧТѢННЫМЪ СТАРИКОМЪ, И ПОЖЕЛАЛИ ЕМУ  
 prahsteèles s' pahstshainneem stahreekom, ee pahzshailàlee yaimoo  
*bade farewell with the venerable old man, and wished him*

ТИХОЙ СМЕРТИ.  
 tèekhoy smairtee.  
*an easy death.*

Карамзинъ.  
 Kahrrahmzeèn.

Elements  
 of speech.

13.—Words, when considered as the elements of speech, are either *denominative* (знаменательныя) or *auxiliary* (служебныя). The former express the idea of objects, of their qualities or actions; the latter merely design the connexion that exists among the denominative words; thus in this phrase: Птицы летаютъ по воздуху, а рыбы живутъ въ водѣ, *birds fly in the air, and fishes live in water*, the denominative words are: *птицы, летаютъ, воздуху, рыбы, живутъ, водѣ*, and the auxiliary words are: *по, а, въ*. The former are called the *parts* (части), and the latter the *particles of speech* (частицы рѣчи). The parts and particles of speech, in the Russian language, may be brought under nine different heads; namely:

## I. PARTS OF SPEECH:

1. The *substantive* (имя существительное).
2. The *adjective* (имя прилагательное).
3. The *pronoun* (мѣстоимѣніе).
4. The *verb* (глаголь).
5. The *participle* (причастіе).
6. The *adverb* (нарѣчіе) and the *gerund* (дѣепричастіе).

## II. PARTICLES OF SPEECH:

7. The *preposition* (предлогъ).
8. The *conjunction* (союзъ).
9. The *interjection* (междомѣтіе).

Certain languages, such as the French, German, English and others, make use of a distinctive word before a common noun, whenever employed in speech, unless the same be sufficiently determined by the accompanying word; thus the French say: *le chapeau, la plume*; the German: *der Hut, die Feder*; and the English: *the hat, the pen*. If the common noun, however, be taken in an indeterminate sense, it is then preceded by another word; as: *un chapeau, une plume*; *ein Hut, eine Feder*; *a hat, a pen*. This kind of word is called *article* (членъ), and distinguished in those tongues by the *definite* and *indefinite* article. In French the articles are: *le, la, les, and un, une, des*; in German: *der, die, das, die, and ein, eine*; in English: *the* and *a* or *an*. The Russian language has no articles, it being left to the sense of the sentence to indicate whether the common noun is taken in a determinate or indeterminate sense. This deficiency is sometimes also supplied by other words, such as *тотъ, this*, to indicate a determinate, and *нѣкоторый, certain*, to indicate an indeterminate sense; as: *Тотъ человекъ, о которомъ вы говорите, пришѣлъ ко мнѣ, the man of whom you speak, is come to me; нѣкоторый человекъ пришѣлъ ко мнѣ, a man is come to me.*

- 14.—All words, whether parts of speech or particles, are either *primitive* or *derivative*, *simple* or *compound*. The *primitives* (первообразныя) are such

Divisio  
of word

as are not formed from other words; e. g. садъ, *garden*; жена, *woman*; бѣлый, *white*; жить, *to live*. The *derivatives* (производныя) are such as are formed from words already existing in the language, e. g. садовникъ, *gardener*; жѣнский, *womanly*; бѣлизна, *whiteness*; пережить, *to over-live*. *Compounds* (сложныя) are formed of two denominative words; e. g. садоводство, *horticulture*, from садъ, *garden* (lat. *hortus*), and водить, *cultivate*; трудолюбіе, *love of work*, from трудъ, *work*, and любить, *to love*. All other words, whether primitive or derivative, are *simple* (простыя).

Roots  
of words.

15.—Every word, whether primitive or derivative, simple or compound, is formed from *roots* (корни), or from radical syllables and letters, which become words by the junction of other roots. Thus in the words: зрю, *I see*; зрѣніе, *the sight*; зримый, *visible*; зоркій, *sharp-sighted*; обозрѣть, *to examine*, the root is the syllable зор or the mixed consonant зр, which becomes significant by the addition of the syllables ю, ѣніе, имый, кій, обо, &c.—The roots may be divided into *principal* and *secondary*.

1) The *principal* roots (главные) are such as serve to form denominative words, or parts of speech; such are the roots вид, ок, рук, whence the words видъ, *sight*; око, *eye*; рука, *hand*, are formed. 2) The *secondary* roots (придаточные) are those from which, in the first place, auxiliary words or particles are formed, e. g. изъ, *of*; въ, *in*; съ, *with*; and which afterwards serve to form words by being united with the principal roots; e. g. видный, *visible*; очки, *spectacles*; поручить, *to commit*. Thus the secondary roots

are: *a) initial* (предъидущіе), placed at the beginning of words, and called *prefixes* or *prepositions*, e. g. у-ходъ, *departure*; от-казъ, *refusal*; and *b) final* (послѣдующіе), which form the terminations of words, and are called *suffixes*, e. g. вод-а, *water*; зем-ля, *earth*; крас-ный, *red*; дѣл-аѣ, *to do*.

In order to trace Russian words properly so called, that is to say Slavonian words, to their roots, the learner will do well to proceed in the following manner. Let us take as examples the words преизбыточествовать, *to superabound*, and засвидѣтельствова́ніе, *attestation*. After taking away the initial secondary roots *пре* and *за*, and the finals *ать* and *аніе*, there remain the words избыточество, *abundance*, and свидѣтельство, *testimony*, which are derived from избытокъ, *superfluity*, and свидѣтель (in Slavonian *свѣдѣтель*), *witness*. These last mentioned are themselves derived from избытъ, *to abound*, and свѣдѣть, *to know*; words which are formed of the prepositions *изъ* and *съ*, joined to the simple verbs *быть*, *to be*, and *вѣдѣть* or *вѣдать*, *to know*, from whence if we take away the terminations of the infinitive, there remain *бы* and *вѣд*. We thus see the root of the word преизбыточествовать is **БЫ**; the steps of its formation being apparent: *быть*, *избытъ*, *избытокъ*, *избыточество*, *избыточествовать*, *преизбыточествовать*; the word засвидѣтельствова́ніе has **ВѢД** for its root, whence are derived: *вѣдѣть* or *вѣдать*, *свѣдѣть*, *свѣдѣтель* (in Russian *свидѣтель*), *свидѣтельство*, *свидѣтельствова́ть*, *засвидѣтельствова́ть*, *засвидѣтельствова́ніе*.

Every Russian word of Slavonian origin may be submitted to the same process of dissection, and the learner will find the following words appropriate as an exercise: независимость, *independence*; неизмѣримый, *immensurable*; председа́тельствова́ть, *to preside*; сострада́ніе, *compassion*; изобре́тательность, *invention, inventive faculty*; вспомо́гательный, *auxiliary*; честолю́біе, *ambition*; удовле́творительный, *satisfactory*; путеше́ственникъ, *traveller*; законода́тельство, *legislation*; земледе́льческій, *agricultural*; паредво́рецъ, *courtier*.

Inflections  
of words.

16.—The parts of speech, or denominative words, are distinguished from the particles, or auxiliary words, by being subject to sundry *inflections* (измѣненія), which are usually of two kinds: *constant* (постоянныя) and *accidental* (случайныя).—1) The *constant* inflections are met with in the structure of derivative and compound words. This is what is called the *formation* (образованіе) of a word; e. g. царь, *king*; царица, *queen*; царскій, *royal*; царство, *kingdom*; царственный, *of the kingdom*; царствовать, *to reign*; царствованіе, *reigning*.—2) The *accidental* inflections are the different terminations and prepositions which a word takes, and which without changing its nature serve to express some circumstance connected with the idea designated by the word; e. g. рука, *the hand*; рукою, *with the hand*; руки, *the hands*; вижу, *I see*; видишь, *thou seest*; бѣлый, *white*; бѣлѣйшій, *whiter*; побѣлѣе, *a little whiter*, &c.

Metaplasms  
of words.

17.—The different inflections of which words are susceptible, undergo, in order to facilitate the pronunciation, *metaplasms* (перемѣны), which at times change even the final letters of the radical word. These metaplasms or alterations consist in the *permutation* (замѣна) of one letter for another; in the *epenthesis* (вставка) and *prosthesis* (приставка) of some letters, and in the *apocope* (усѣченіе) and *syncope* (изъятіе) of others.

Permutation  
of letters.

18.—The *permutation* of letters, in the Russian language, arises from the circumstance that some vowels cannot be placed in juxta-position with certain consonants; thus the hissing, guttural and lingual

consonants (ж, ч, ш, щ; г, к, х; ц) cannot be joined with some vowels; the vowels я, е, ю, and the semi-vowel ъ, never admit immediately before them either the guttural consonants (г, к, х), in any inflection, or sometimes the dental and lisping consonants (д, т; з, ц); and further the vowel у, in the derivation of words, never admits before it either the gutturals or the lingual (г, к, х; ц), which are then changed for the hissing consonants (ж, ч, ш, щ), as is seen below.

## PERMUTATION OF LETTERS.

1. The consonants г, д, з, . . . . .	} before я, е, и, ю, ъ, . . . . .	{ change into ж. change into ч. change into ш. change into щ.
2. The consonants к, п, ц, . . . . .		
3. The consonants х, с, . . . . .		
4. The consonants ск, ст, . . . . .		
5. The vowel я, . . . . .	} after г, к, х; ж, ч, ш, щ; ц, . . . . .	{ changes into а. changes into у.
6. The vowel ю, . . . . .		
7. The vowel ы, after г, к, х; ж, ч, ш, щ, . . . . .		changes into я.
8. The vowel о, after ж, ч, ш, щ; ц, . . . . .		changes into е.
9. The vowel ъ, after the vowel і, . . . . .		changes into я.
10. The semi-vowel ъ, after a vowel, . . . . .		changes into й.
11. The semi-vowels ъ and й, before a consonant with ъ, . . . . .		change into е.
12. The semi-vowel ъ, before two consonants, . . . . .		changes into о.

Examples: 1) *служить*, to serve; *вижу*, I see; *рѣжь*, cut, from *слуга*, servant; *видѣть*, to see; *рѣзать*, to cut; 2) *мучить*, to torment; *свѣча*, candle; *отѣчество*, native land, from *мука*, torment; *свѣтъ*, light; *отѣцъ*, father; 3) *тѣше*, slower; *прошѣніе*, petition, from *тихъ*, slow; *просить*, to ask; 4) *ищу*, I seek; *чище*, purer, from *искать*, to seek; *чистъ*, pure; 5) *служá* (for *служоя*), serving; 6) *вожý*, (for *вожюю*), I lead; 7) *руки*, the hands; *мужи*, the men (for *рукы*, *мужы*); 8) *пальцемъ* (for *пáльцомъ*), with the finger; 9) *въ Россіи* (for *въ Россію*), in Russia; 10) *недѣля*, week, has for its genitive plural *недѣль*; whilst *шея*, the neck, has *шей*; 11) *судьба*, destiny; *копѣйка*, *копѣекъ*, have in the genitive plural *судѣбъ*, *копѣекъ* (for *судѣбъ*, *копѣйкъ*); 12) *во мнѣ*, in me; *со всѣмъ*, with all (for *въ мнѣ*, *съ всѣмъ*).

These permutations are subject to certain exceptions. The dental consonants (д, т) sometimes preserve the Slavonian per-



mutation жд and щ, as граждани́нъ, *citizen*; пи́ща, *aliment*, from градо́, city; пита́ть, to nourish. When the accented vowel *e* is pronounced *o* (after ж, ч, ш, щ, ц), the vowel *o* may be used, as хоро́шо, *well*; плечо́, *shoulder*; яйцо́, *egg*. It still remains to be observed that in words where г, к, х, ц, are changed before н and ж, as но́жка, *a little foot*; вѣ́чный, *eternal*; пасту́шка, *shepherdess*; личны́й, *personal* (from ногá, foot; въ́къ, an age; пасту́хъ, shepherd; лице́, individual), the change is not required by the letters н and ж, but arises from the circumstance that formerly the semi-vowel *ь*, before which the consonants г, к, х, ц, change into ж, ч, ш, was employed before those consonants (но́жька, въ́чьный, &c.), but has been suppressed in modern orthography.

Epenthesis  
and prosthesis.

19.—*Epenthesis*, or the insertion of a letter in the middle of a word, and *prosthesis*, or the addition of a letter at the beginning of a word, take place both to facilitate the pronunciation, and to unite letters which cannot be placed in juxta-position. The vowels *o* and *e* are inserted between two consonants at the end of words, and thus serve as a connecting link between the two roots of a compound word; e. g. огóнь, *fire*; вѣ́теръ, *wind* (instead of the Slavonian огнь, въ́тръ); законодáтель, *legislator*; землeописáние, *geography*. The consonant л is inserted also after the labials (б, в, м, п, ф), when they ought to be followed by ю or е; e. g. люблю́, *I love*; дешéвле, *cheaper* (from любить, to love; дешéво, cheap). The consonant н is also epenthetic in внушáть, *to suggest*; поднимáть, *to take up*; на него́, *against him*. The consonant в is sometimes added at the beginning of a word, before the vowel *o*; e. g. вóсьмь, *eight* (instead of the Slavonian осьмь); вóстрый, *sharp*; вóтчина, *patrimony* (used familiarly for о́стрый, о́тчина). The same is the

case with the vowel *o* in оржаной, of *rya* (for

20.—*Апосcope*, or the cutting of a letter at the end of a word, and *syncope*, or the elision of a letter in the middle of a word, are employed to facilitate or soften the pronunciation,\*e. g. со мною, *with me*; чтобъ, *in order that*; двину́ть, *to move*; обеща́ть, *to promise*; блесну́ть, *to shine*; полтора́, *one and a half* (instead of со мно́ю, что́бы, дви́нуть, обеща́ть, блесну́ть, полтора́). Апосcope  
and syncope

#### THE SUBSTANTIVE.

21.—The *substantives* (существительныя имена́) Division of  
substantives in the Russian language are of two kinds: common nouns or *appellatives* (нарица́тельные), as: челове́къ, *man*; го́родъ, *town*; рѣ́ка, *river*; and individual or *proper* nouns (со́бственныя), as: Влади́миръ, *Vladimir*; Москв́а, *Moscow*; Во́лга, *the Volga*.—Among the common nouns we distinguish a class called *collective* (собира́тельные), such are: наро́дъ, *people*; ста́до, *herd*; лѣ́съ, *forest*; also *material* nouns (веще́ственные), such are: му́ка, *flour*; ма́сло, *oil*; зо́лото, *gold*.—The proper names of men are of three kinds: *a*) *christian* names (крёстныя имена́), as: Алекса́ндръ, *Alexander*; Ле́въ, *Leon*; Ольга, *Olga*; Любо́вь, *Amy*; *b*) *patronymic* names (отче́ственные), as: Алекса́ндровичъ and Алекса́ндровна, *son and daughter of Alexander*; Льво́вичъ and Льво́вна, *son and daughter of Leon*; and *c*) *family* names (про́звищныя, фами́льныя), as: Держави́нъ, *Derzhavin*; Орло́въ, *Orlof*; Долгору́кий, *Dolgorooky*; Толсто́й, *Tolstoi*.

Properties  
of nouns.

22.—The properties of substantives in the Russian language are, the *gender* (родъ), the *aspect* (видъ), the *number* (число) and the *case* (падѣжъ). The two former are *constant* inflections, belonging to the formation of nouns; the two latter are *accidental* inflections, employed in the declension.

Genders

23.—In the Russian language there are three genders: the *masculine* (мужескій), the *feminine* (женскій) and the *neuter* (средній). The genders of nouns are known, in the names of animate beings, by their *signification*, and in the names of inanimate and abstract objects, by their *termination*.

1. The *masculine* gender comprehends the names of animate beings of the male sex; e. g. отѣцъ, *the father*; герóй, *the hero*; царь, *the king*; юноша, *a young man*; дядя, *an uncle*; мѣняло, *a money-changer*; подмастерье, *a journeyman*; and also, such names of inanimate and abstract objects terminating in ѣ, й, and some which end in ъ, e. g. домъ, *the house*; поко́й, *repose*; корáбль, *a vessel*.

2. The *feminine* gender comprehends the names of animate beings of the female sex; e. g. сестра́, *the sister*; ня́ня, *a nurse*; дочь, *the daughter*; Елисаветъ, *Elizabeth*; Клио́, *Clio*; also the names of inanimate and abstract objects terminating in а, я, and some which end in ъ; e. g. кни́га, *a book*, пу́ля, *a ball*; добродѣ́тель, *virtue*.

3. The *neuter* gender comprehends the names of animate beings where the distinction of sex is not evident, as: дитя́ and ча́до, *a child*; чудóвище, *a monster*; and also the names of animate and abstract

objects terminating in *o*, *e*, and *мя*, e. g. з<sup>о</sup>лото, *gold*; мо<sup>ре</sup>, *the sea*; вре<sup>мя</sup>, *the time*.

As regards the rules relating to the genders, the following observations are of importance: \*

1. The nouns which designate any particular species of animals, form an exception to the rule which declares the gender of nouns designating animate being to be determined by their *signification*. These nouns are, according to their *termination*, either masculine, as: челове<sup>къ</sup>, *a man*; носоро<sup>гъ</sup>, *a rhinoceros*; соко<sup>лъ</sup>, *a falcon*; оку<sup>нь</sup>, *a perch*; or feminine, as: обезья<sup>на</sup>, *an ape*; соба<sup>ка</sup>, *a dog*; лошад<sup>ь</sup>, *a horse*; щу<sup>ка</sup>, *a pike*.

2. To determine the gender of nouns terminating in *b*, the following rules may be given:

1) Besides such nouns as designate animate beings of the male sex, the following are *masculine*: a) The names of the months, as: январ<sup>ь</sup>, *January*; ию<sup>ль</sup>, *July*; декаб<sup>рь</sup>, *December*, &c. b) The names of active objects, or agents, although inanimate, terminating in *тель*, as: числитель, *the numerator*; множител<sup>ь</sup>, *the multiplier*, &c. c) The common nouns designating animate beings, as: гу<sup>сь</sup>, *a goose*; ло<sup>сь</sup>, *an elk*; &c., with the exception of some names of animals which are feminine, such as: лошад<sup>ь</sup>, *a horse*; сельд<sup>ь</sup>, *a herring*; вош<sup>ь</sup>, *a louse*; мыш<sup>ь</sup>, *a mouse*; форел<sup>ь</sup>, *the trout*, and some others. d) The names of towns, lakes and places, whether Russian or foreign, as: Яросла<sup>вль</sup>, *Yaroslav*; Сева<sup>сто</sup>поль, *Sebastopol*; Брю<sup>ссель</sup>, *Bruxelles*, with the exception of Каза<sup>нь</sup>, *Kazan*; Астраха<sup>нь</sup>, *Astrachan*; Твер<sup>ь</sup>, *Tvaïr*; Верса<sup>ль</sup>, *Versailles*; Було<sup>нь</sup>, *Boulogne*; Марсе<sup>ль</sup>, *Marseilles*; Испага<sup>нь</sup>, *Ispahan*; Эри<sup>вань</sup>, *Erivan*.

2) The following are *feminine*: a) All the names of abstract objects, e. g. жизн<sup>ь</sup>, *life*; чест<sup>ь</sup>, *honour*, &c., with the exception of день, *the day*; перече<sup>нь</sup>, *an extract*; воп<sup>ль</sup>, *cries*; вих<sup>рь</sup>, *a whirlwind*; and foreign words, such as: контро<sup>ль</sup>, *control*; парол<sup>ь</sup>, *parole*; спектак<sup>ль</sup>, *spectacle*; стил<sup>ь</sup>, *style*. b) The names of rivers and countries; e. g. Об<sup>ь</sup>, *the Obi*; Сибир<sup>ь</sup>, *Siberia*, &c., except Анады<sup>рь</sup>, *Anadir*. c) The common names of inanimate objects; e. g. бров<sup>ь</sup>, *the eyebrow*; ветв<sup>ь</sup>, *a branch*; церков<sup>ь</sup>, *a church*, &c., except the following which are masculine:

- алкоголь, alcohol.  
 алтарь, an altar.  
 бемоль, B-flat. [tunic.  
 бешметъ, Tartar under  
 бивань, mizzen-sail.  
 биль, a billiard ball.  
 блягирь, massicot. [sail.  
 брамсель, top-gallant  
 бредень, a drag-net.  
 букварь, ABC-book.  
 бюллетень, a bulletin.  
 вконецъ, bill of exchange.  
 вэнзель, a monogram.  
 волдырь, a tubercle.  
 гвоздь, a nail.  
 глголь, a crane.  
 горбыль, a sleeve-board.  
 госпиталь, a hospital.  
 грёбень, a comb.  
 грифель, a slate-pencil.  
 груздь, a fungus.  
 дёготь, tar.  
 денарь, denarius.  
 дождь, rain.  
 дягиль, angelica.  
     , an acorn.  
     , the jonquille.  
 золотень, golden-rod.  
 зубарь, a toothed plane.  
 иверень, a splinter.  
 инбяръ, ginger.  
 калриль, a quadrille.  
 календарь, almanach.  
 камень, a stone.  
 картофель, potatoes.  
 кашель, a cough.  
 кегель, a skittle.  
 кёрвель, chervil.  
 киль, the keel (*of a ship*).  
 кипень, hot-spring.  
     , a sourish jelly.  
     bullet tied to a  
     , a claw. [string.  
 козырь, a trump.  
 колодезь, a well.  
 коньмень, wild nard.  
 корабль, a ship.  
 корень, a root.  
 косарь, chopping knife.
- костыль, a crutch-stick.  
 кочень, a head of cab-  
 кремёнь, a flint. [bage.  
 кремль, citadel, castle.  
 крендель, a cracknel.  
 кубарь, a top.  
 кудерь, curly hair.  
 куколь, corn-cockle.  
 куль, a mat-sack.  
 лагерь, a camp.  
 лапотъ, a bast-shoe.  
 ларь, a large chest.  
 лёжень, foundation beam.  
 локоть, the elbow.  
 ломоть, a slice.  
 марсель, top-sail.  
 мергель, marl.  
 миндаль, almonds.  
 миткаль, calico.  
 монастырь, a convent.  
 муфель, a muffle.  
 нашатырь, sal ammoniac.  
 николь, nickel.  
 ноготь, a finger-nail.  
 нуль, a cipher, zero.  
 огонь, fire.  
 орарь, the stole.  
 панцырь, coat of mail.  
 пенъ, a stump.  
 перистиль, a peristyle.  
 перкаль, shirting calico.  
 перстень, a ring.  
 пистоль, a pistole.  
 пламень, flame.  
 пластырь, a plaster.  
 плетень, wattled hedge.  
 портфель, a portfolio.  
 поршень, a piston.  
 пролежень, place chafed  
     by lying.  
 противень, dripping-pan.  
 профиль, a profile.  
 пузырь, a bladder.  
 пупырь, a pimple.  
 пустырь, a vacant space.  
 путь, the road.  
 пьязь, money.  
 рашкуль, blue-black.  
 рашпиль, a rasp.
- ревень, the rhubarb.  
 ремёнь, a strap.  
 рубль, a rooble.  
 руль, the helm.  
 сбйтенъ, honey-tea.  
 сераль, a seraglio.\*  
 складень, a necklace.  
 слизень, the slug.  
 словарь, a dictionary.  
 срóслень, double branche.  
 ставень, a window-  
     shutter.  
 стáксель, stay-sail.  
 стáпель, stocks, launch.  
 стебель, a stalk.  
 стёржень, core (*of a boil*).  
 стихарь, the surplice.  
 сударь, a winding-sheet.  
 сухарь, a rusk, biscuit.  
 тополь, the poplar.  
 трэнзель, the curb.  
 трюфель, a truffle.  
 туфель, a slipper.  
 уголь, charcoal.  
 уровень, a level.  
 внятъ, a match. [*house*).  
 фальгель, a wing (*of a*  
 фонарь, a lantern.  
 фухтель, flad side of a  
 хмъль, the hop. [sword.  
 ходень, an object in mo-  
     tion.  
 хрусталь, crystal.  
 циркуль, pair of compas-  
 цоколь, the socle. [ses.  
 чекмень, cosack upper-  
     coat.  
 черноталь, bay-leaved  
     willow.  
 чихирь, new wine.  
 шёлуль, the scab.  
 шёфелъ, a bushel.  
 шкворень, pole-bolt (*of*  
     *a coach*).  
 шнелъ, a capstan.  
 штемпель, a stamp.  
 штиль, a calm.  
 щавель, sorrel.  
 щёбень, rubbish.

ѢРЬ, the letter Ъ.  
ѦЛЬ, the letter Л.

ЯКОРЬ, an anchor.  
ЯТАРЬ, sea-amber.

ЯСЕНЬ, the ash-tree.  
ЯЧМѢНЬ, barley.

3. Words taken from foreign languages and ending in *и, у, ю*, as; КОЛИБРИ, *a humming bird*; КАКАДУ, *the kakatoo*; РЕВЮ, *the review*, are masculine, when they signify an animate being, and neuter when signifying an inanimate object. The other parts of speech, used as substantives, are neuter; e. g. ГРОМКОЕ УРА, *a noisy hurrah*; ПЕРВОЕ НѢТЬ, *the first no*; НЕСНОСИМОЕ Я, *an insupportable I*.

4. Some nouns, terminating in *а* and *я*, and designating animate beings, with some quality attached, are of the *common* gender (ОБЩІЙ), being both masculine and feminine. The following are examples:

БРОДЯГА, *a vagabond (man or woman)*.  
БРЮЗГА, *a grumbler*.  
ВОРОЖЕЙ, *a fortune-teller*.  
ВЫСКОЧКА, *an upstart*.  
ВЪТРЕННИЦА, *a volatile person*.  
ГУЛЯКА, *a lazy person*.  
ДОКА, *a clever fellow*.  
ЗАБІЯКА, *a squabbler*.  
ЗАЙКА, *a stutterer*.  
ЗВѢАКА, *a mnny, a cockney*.  
КРИВОШЕЯ, *a wryneck*.  
ЛАКОМКА, *a dainty person*.  
ЛѢВША, *a left-handed person*.  
МОТЫГА, *a prodigal person*.  
НЕВѢЖДА, *an ignorant person*.

ОБЖОРА, *a glutton (man or woman)*.  
ПЛАКСА, *a weeper*.  
ПОРУКА, *a surety*.  
ПУСТОЧЕЛЯ, *a chatterer*.  
ПЬЯНИЦА, *a drunkard*.  
РАЗІЯ, *a loiterer*.  
РОВНЯ, *a person of the same age*.  
РУБАКА, *a slasher*.  
САМОУЧКА, *a self-taught person*.  
СВЯТОША, *a bigoted person*.  
СИРОТА, *an orphan*.  
ТЕЗКА, *a namesake*.  
УБИЙЦА, *a murderer or murderess*.  
УМНИЦА, *a clever person*.  
ХАНЖА, *a hypocrite*.

5. The genders of words signifying relationship, as also the names of animals, are distinguished in various ways. Sometimes by the employment of different words; e. g. ОТЕЦЪ, *the father*, and МАТЬ, *the mother*; СЫНЪ, *the son*, and ДОЧЬ, *the daughter*; БРАТЪ, *the brother*; and СЕСТРА, *the sister*; БЫКЪ, *the bull*, and КОРОВА, *the cow*; ПѢТУХЪ, *the cock*, and КУРИЦА, *the hen*; БАРАНЪ, *the ram*, and ОВЦА, *the sheep*, &c. Sometimes the same word and the same gender are applied to both sexes; e. g. ДРУГЪ, *a friend*; ВРАГЪ, *an enemy*; ТОВАРИЩЪ, *a companion*; ДИТЯ, *a child (male and female)*; ОСОБА, *a person*; occasionally the same word is used but with common gender, as has already been said. Usually however masculine nouns, if used to designate feminine objects, change their termination. In these, which are called *movable* nouns (ДВИЖИМЫЯ), for the masculine ending

are substituted the feminine terminations: *a, я, ка, овка, ица, уца, ница, иня, ша*, and some others, the preceding consonant being at the same time often changed, as is seen in the following examples:

кумъ, godfather; кума, godmother.	шутъ; шутѡвка, a buffoon, <i>m.</i> and <i>f.</i>
павлинъ, peacock; павѡ, peahen.	левъ, a lion; львица, a lioness.
господинъ, master; госпожа, mistress.	императоръ, emperor; -патрица, empress.
тестъ, father-in-law; тѡща, mother-in-law.	жрецъ, priest; жрица, priestess.
дуракъ; дура, a fool, <i>m.</i> and <i>f.</i>	карла; карлица, a dwarf, <i>m.</i> and <i>f.</i>
козѡлъ, a he-goat; коза, a she-goat.	житель; жительница, inhabitant, <i>m.</i> and <i>f.</i>
гость; гостѡя, a guest, <i>m.</i> and <i>f.</i>	монахъ, a monk; монахиня, a nun.
игуменъ, an abbot; игуменѡя, an abbess.	князь, prince; княгиня, princess.
лгуиъ; лгунѡя, a liar, <i>m.</i> and <i>f.</i>	герой, hero; героиня, heroine.
сосѡдъ; сосѡдка, a neighbour, <i>m.</i> and <i>f.</i>	богъ, a god; богиня, a goddess.
слуга, man-servant; -жанка, maid-servant.	графъ, count; графиня, countess.
пастухъ, shepherd; -ушка, shepherdess.	опекунъ; опекуша, a guardian, <i>m.</i> and <i>f.</i>
крестьянинъ; крестьянка, peasant, <i>m.</i> and <i>f.</i>	великанъ, giant; великанша, giantess.
самѡецъ, a male; самка, a female.	корѡль, king; королева, queen.
хозяинъ, host; хозяйка, hostess.	барѡнъ, baron; баронесса, baroness.
жидъ, a Jew; жидѡвка, a Jewess.	государъ; государыня, sovereign, <i>m.</i> and <i>f.</i>
чижъ, siskin; чижѡвка, hen-siskin.	старикъ, an old man; старуха, an old woman.
щѡголь, a beau; щѡголица, a belle.	швецъ, sempster; швеѡ, sempstress.
поваръ, a cook; поварѡха, a cook-maid.	свѡкоръ, father-in-law; свѡкоровѡ, mother-in-law.

It remains to be observed that in professional names the Russian language makes a distinction between the name of the wife of a professional man, and the name of a woman who, herself, exercises a profession; e. g. инспектрица, *inspectress*, and инспекторша, *wife of an inspector*; лекарка, *a woman who practices medicine*, and лекарша, *wife of a doctor*; двѡрница, *a female door-keeper*, and двѡрничиха, *wife of a door-keeper*; учительница, *schoolmistress*; and учительша, *wife of a schoolmaster* (from *инспекторъ, лекаръ, двѡрникъ* and *учитель*).

Aspects. 24.—Objects may present themselves to us in different forms, as greater or less, prettier or uglier, than ordinary; and the Russian language has different inflections to express these *aspects*.

1. The *augmentative* nouns (увеличительныя), which terminate in the masculine in *ище, ина*; in the neuter in *ище*, and in the feminine in *ища*, represent the object in a magnified form, at the same time adding the idea of ugliness or deformity; e. g. *мужичище, a great clownish peasant*; *дурачина, a great blockhead*; *личище, great face*; *лапища, a great paw* (from *мужикъ, дуракъ, лице* and *лапа*).

2. The *diminutive* nouns (уменьшительныя), which present the object diminished in size, end, in the masculine in *икъ, окъ, екъ, ецъ, якъ*; in the neuter in *ко, це*, and in the feminine in *ка, ица*, e. g. *столикъ, little table*; *червякъ, little worm*; *заводець, little manufactory*; *деревцо, little tree*; *ручка, little hand*; *вещица, little thing* (from *столъ, червь, заводъ, дерево, рука* and *вещь*). From these diminutives others again are formed, as: *столичекъ, червячекъ, ручечка, вещичка*.

Besides these diminutives, which lessen the force of the primitives, and which may be termed *physical* diminutives, there are further: *a*) diminutives of tenderness, friendship, or in one word, of feeling, which terminate in *ушка, юшка, енька*, as: *бáтyшка, dear father*; *мáтyшка, dear mother*; *мáменька, dear mamma* (from *бáтя, мать* and *мáма*); and *b*) diminutives of contempt or slight, presenting the object in an unfavourable point of view; these terminate in *ушко, ушка, енка*, e. g. *дóмишко, a miserable little house*; *лошадёнка, a miserable little horse*.

Christian names admit also diminutives, both in a favourable and unfavourable sense; thus *Ивáнъ,*



*John*; Пётръ, *Peter*; Серѣй, *Sergius*, become as diminutives of feeling В́аня, Цѣтя, Серѣжа, and as diminutives of contempt В́анька, Пѣтька, Серѣжка. These diminutives, by which the primitive nouns are limited and changed, can only be learned by practice.

- The diminutives properly so called, which indicate the smallness of objects, are very commonly employed in Russian, while diminutives of feeling and contempt are seldom used except in familiar language. The same remark applies equally to the augmentatives.

Numbers. 25.—In Russian, as in English, there are two numbers; the *singular* (единственное число), as: столъ, *the table*; книга, *a book*; окно́, *the window*; and the *plural* (множественное), as: столы́, *the tables*; книги́, *books*; окна́, *the windows*.

The Slavonian, like the Greek, has a third number, the *dual* (дво́йственное), which has been retained in certain Russian inflections, as will subsequently be seen.

Some substantives are only used in the *singular*; such are most proper names, and the names of material and abstract objects; e. g. серебро́, *silver*; я́сность, *evidence*; любóвь, *love*. Others are only used in the *plural*; the following are of this class.

<i>Masculine gender.</i>	<i>Neuter gender.</i>	<i>Feminine gender.</i>
квасцы́, alum.	бѣла́я, white lead.	бурю́льки, the needle game.
люди́, people	воро́та, yard-gate.	имя́нины, a name-day.
обо́и, tapestry.	дрова́, fire-wood.	но́жницы, scissors.
опи́лки, saw-dust.	крѣ́сла, an arm-chair	око́вы, fetters, chains.
очки́, spectacles.	перѣ́ла, a balustrade.	отру́би, bran.
про́гоны, post-fare.	письме́на, letters.	ро́дны, delivery
пѣ́льцы, a sewing-frame.	раме́на, shoulders.	ры́ль, a hurdy-gurdy.
суда́к, a cruet stand.	уста́, mouth.	са́ни, sledge.
тиски́, a press.	черни́ла, ink.	сѹмерки́, dawn.
щипцы́, snuffers.	чресла́, the loins.	су́тки, day (24 hours).

Some names of towns are only used in the plural; such are: Бѣльцы́, Вязники́, Крестцы́, of the *masculine gender*, and Брѣ́нницы́, Холмо́горы, and the foreign names: Аѣ́нины, *Athens*; Я́ссы, *Iassy*; О́ивы, *Thebes*, of the *feminine gender*.

26.—The *cases* are different inflections which nouns assume to indicate the mutual relation of objects. The English language has strictly speaking but one case, the genitive; the mutual relation of words being indicated either by a preposition or by the position of words in a phrase. In the Russian language there are seven cases, which may be known, in the names of animate beings, by putting the questions: *кто, когó, кому́, когó, кѣмъ, о комъ?* and in the names of inanimate objects by the questions: *что, чегó, чему́, что, чѣмъ, о чѣмъ?* These are:

1. The *nominative* (именительный падежь), which gives the name of an object in a phrase in answer to the question *кто* or *что?* e. g.

*Кто́ учится? Ученикъ.*

Who studies? *The scholar.*

*Что́ предъ нимъ лежитъ? Книга.*

What is before him? *A book.*

2. The *genitive* (родительный), which indicates possession, and which answers to the question *когó* or *чегó?* and also *чей, чья, чьѣ?* In English this case is expressed by the preposition *of*, or by an apostrophic *s*; e. g.

*Хозяинъ (чегó?) дома.*

The master (*of what?*) *of the house.*

*Домъ (чей?) сосѣда.*

The house (*of whom?*) *of the neighbour.*

*Слушайся (когó?) матери.*

Obey (*whom?*) *thy mother.*

3. The *dative* (дательный), which designates the person or thing to which an object relates, and answers to the question *кому́* or *чему́?* In English the dative is usually indicated by the preposition *to*; e. g.

*Кому́ слѣдуетъ сія награ́да?* To whom does this recompense come? *To the scholar.*  
*Ученику́.*

*Чему́ ты обра́довался?* *Кни́гу.* With what were you delighted?  
*With a book.*

4. The *accusative* (ви́нительный), which commonly called in English grammars the *objective*, answers to the question *кого́* or *что́*? e. g.

*Кого́ ты хва́лишь?* *Ученика́.* Whom do you praise? *The scholar.*  
*Что́ ты купи́лъ?* *Кни́гу.* What have you bought? *A book.*

5. The *vocative* (зва́тельный), which expresses the name of the person or object addressed; e. g.

*Учени́къ, будь приле́женъ!* *Scholar, be attentive!*  
*Бо́же, спаси́ Царя́!* *God, save the Emperór!*

6. The *instrumental* (твори́тельный) or *causative*, which designates the means or cause, and answers to the question *къмъ́* or *чьмъ́*? In English the prepositions *with* and *by* are commonly used for this purpose; e. g.

*Къмъ́ дово́льны?* *Ученико́мъ.* With whom is one satisfied?  
*With the scholar.*

*Чьмъ́ онъ заба́вляе́тся?* *Кни́гою.* With what does he amuses himself? *With a book.*

7. The *prepositional* (предло́жный) or *locative*, which answers to the questions *о комъ́* or *о чьмъ́*? *въ комъ́* or *въ чьмъ́*? &c. This case, which in ecclesiastical Slavonian is called *narrative* (сказа́тельный), is termed in Russian *prepositional*, because it is always accompanied by one of the prepositions *въ, in; на, on; о or объ, of; по, after; при, near to*; e. g.

*О комъ́ гово́рятъ?* *Объ уче́- Of whom do they speak? Of*  
*никъ́.* *the scholar.*

*Въ чьмъ́ ты нахо́дишь удо́воль- In what do you find pleasure?*  
*ствие́?* *Въ кни́гу.* *In a book.*

Two of these seven casual inflections, the *nominative* and *vocative*, are called *direct cases* (прямые), because they simply give the name of the object; the remaining five are timed *oblique* (косвенные).

27.—The change of the inflections in nouns, showing the numbers and cases, is called *declension* (склонение), and substantives are divided, according to the manner in which they are declined, into *regular* and *irregular*. Declension of substantives.

28.—Regular substantives, according to their termination, have three declensions: the *first* for nouns with the *masculine termination*, (ъ, и, ь); the *second* for those with the *neuter termination* (о, е, мя), and the *third* for those with the *feminine termination* (а, я, ь). Each of these declensions has three inflections, one *hard*, and two *soft*, as exhibited in the table below. The two following observations relative to this subject are important. Regular substantives.

1. The *vocative* is always like the *nominative*, except in the words Богъ, *God*; Господь, *Lord*; Иисусъ, *Jesus*; Христосъ, *Christ*; Отецъ, *Father*, which, in an invocation of the Deity, preserve the Slavonian inflection; Боже, Господи, Иисусе, Христе, Отче.

2.—The *accusative, singular* of masculine nouns in the two first declensions, and *plural* in all three, is like the *nominative* when the noun designates an inanimate or abstract object, and like the *genitive* in the names of animate beings.

Masculine nouns, ending in *атель* and *итель*, and designating inanimate agents, such as знаменатель, *the denominator*; делитель, *the divisor* (in arithmetic), are declined like the names of animate beings, and consequently their *accusative* is like the

genitive. The same is the case with the names of inanimate objects which have been borrowed from animate, as: *спутникъ*, a *satellite* (of a planet). The word *идолъ*, *idol*, has its accusative like the genitive, whilst in its synonymes *кумиръ* and *истуканъ*, the accusative is like the nominative. The word *лице*, signifying the *face* and an *individual*, is used in both its meanings like the name of an inanimate object, its accusative being always the same as the nominative.

The collective nouns are always declined like the names of inanimate objects, though signifying a collection of animate beings, such as *наро́дъ*, a *nation*; *во́йско*, an *army*; *ста́до*, a *herd*.

DECLENSIONS OF REGULAR SUBSTANTIVES.											
CASES: NUMBERS:	SINGULAR.	FIRST.			SECOND.			THIRD.			
		MASC. TERMINATION.			NEUTER TERMINATION.			FEM. TERMINATION.			
		Hard inf.		Soft inf.	Hard inf.		Soft inf.	Hard inf.		Soft inf.	
		N.	G.	D.	N.	G.	D.	N.	G.	D.	
		ъ	я	ю	о	е	мя	а	я	ь	
		а	я	я	а	я	ени	ы	и	и	
		у	ю	ю	у	ю	ени	ѣ	ѣ (и)	и	
		. like the <i>Nominative</i> or the <i>Genitive</i> . . .			. like the <i>Nominative</i> . . .			у	ю	ь	
		омъ	емъ	емъ	омъ	емъ	енемъ	ою (оѣ)	ею (еѣ)	лю (лю)	
		ѣ	ѣ (и)	ѣ	ѣ	ѣ (и)	ени	ѣ	ѣ (и)	и	
PLURAL.		N.	ы	и	и	а	я	мена	ы	и	и
		G.	овъ (еѣ)	евъ	еѣ	ѣ	еѣ (ѣ, ѣи)	енъ	ѣ (еѣ)	ѣ (ѣ, ѣи)	еѣ
		D.	амъ	ямъ	ямъ	амъ	ямъ	енамъ	амъ	ямъ	ямъ
		A.	. . . . . like the <i>Nominative</i> or the <i>Genitive</i> . . . . .								
		V.	. . . . . like the <i>Nominative</i> . . . . .								
		I.	амѣ	ямѣ	ямѣ	амѣ	ямѣ	енамѣ	амѣ	ямѣ	ямѣ
		P.	ахъ	яхъ	яхъ	ахъ	яхъ	енахъ	ахъ	яхъ	яхъ

ules of the  
elensions.

29.—In declining the regular nouns, certain rules are to be observed, some of which are *general*, being common to all the three declensions, while others are *special*, being confined to one of the declensions or one of the inflections.

1. According to what has already been observed (§ 18) relative to the permutation of letters, *a*) the vowel *я*, of the *genitive singular* and *nominative plural*, is changed for *у* after the guttural and hissing consonants (г, к, х; ж, ч, ш, щ); *b*) the vowel *о*, when without accent, of the *instrumental singular* and *genitive plural*, is changed for *е* after the lingual and hissing consonants (ц; ж, ч, ш, щ), observing however that after the lingual (ц) the vowel *о* may be used if it is accented; *c*) the vowel *я* of the *dative* and *prepositional singular* is changed for *у* after the vowel *и* (in nouns in *иѣ*, *иѣ* and *иѣ*). (See the paradigms 2, 3, 8, 16, 20, 21, 26).

2. A great number of nouns elide in the *other cases* (excepting in the *instrumental singular* of feminine nouns in *б*) the vowel *е* or *о*, inserted in the termination of the *nominative singular*; but we must observe that in this elision the vowel *е* is changed for *ь* after the consonant *я*, and for *ѣ* after a vowel. (See paradigms 2, 4, 10, 28).

3. In such nouns of the II and III declension as have two consonants before the final vowel, the vowel *о* or *е* is usually inserted between the two consonants in the *genitive plural*; in such cases however the *е* is always substituted for the semi-vowels *ь* and *ѣ*. (See paradigms 12, 13, 20, 23).

4. The *genitive plural* has some particular inflections: the inflection *ѣ* (instead of *оѣ* and *ѣ*) is peculiar to nouns in *юѣ*, *ѣѣ*, *шѣ*, *щѣ*, *ѣѣ*, to those in *юѣ*, *ѣѣ*, *шѣ*, preceded by another consonant, and to those in *ѣѣ* and in *ѣѣ*; the inflection *ѣ* to nouns in *ѣ* and *ѣ* preceded by a vowel, and the inflection *иѣ* to nouns in *ѣѣ* and *ѣѣ*, contracted from *иѣ* and *иѣ*. (See paradigms 3, 16, 21, 24, 25, 26).

5. Such nouns as are only used in the *plural*, are declined according to the paradigm to which, by their termination, they belong. Thus among the *masculine* nouns, *хорóмы*, *edifice*, is declined according to the 1st paradigm (закóны); *щипцы*, *snuffers*, according to the 2d (отцы); *обóи*, *tapestry*, according to the 6th (герóи); *люди*, *men* (*instr.* людѣми), according to the 9th (короли); among the *neuter* nouns, *дрóвѣ*, *firewood*, according to the 11th (слóвѣ); *крéсла*, *arm-chair* (*gen.* крéсель), according to the 12th (стéкла); *письмéнѣ*, *letters*, according to the 18th (врéмéнѣ); among the *feminine* nouns, *окóвы*, *chains*, according

to the 19th (КОРОВА); ПОСЫЛКИ, *a hand-barrow* (gen. ПОСЫЛОКЪ), according to the 20th (ПЯЛКИ); САННИ, *a sledge*, and РЫЛѢ, *a hurdy-gurdy*, according to the 27th (СТРАСТЬ).

6. *Foreign nouns*, whether common or proper, ending in *з, ѣ, б; а, я, в*, are declined like Russian nouns with the same terminations, whilst those in *е, и, о, у* and *ю*, are indeclinable. The same is the case with family names of females, whatever may be their termination. Thus ОМНИБУСЪ, *an omnibus*; ЛОНДОНЪ, *London*, are declined according to the 1st paradigm (ЗАКОНЪ); КОНВОЙ, *a convoy*; БАРКЛАЙ, *Barclay*, according to the 6th (ГЕРОЙ); ВОДЕВИЛЬ, *a vaudeville*; БРЮССЕЛЬ, *Bruxelles*, according to the 19th (КОРОЛЬ); ПЬЕСА, *a piece*, (of music, &c.); ПЕТРАРКА, *Petrarch*, according to the 19th (КОРОВА); КОЛОНИЯ, *a colony*, according to the 26th (МОЛНІЯ); ГАВАНЬ *f. a haven*, according to the 27th (СТРАСТЬ). But КОФЕ, *coffee*; КОЛИБРИ, *a humming-bird*; ДЕПО, *depot* (military); РАНДЕВУ, *a rendez-vous*; РЕВЮ, *a review*; КАСТЕЛЬРЕ, *Castlereagh*; МОРО, *Moreau*, are indeclinable. The same is the case with the feminine family names; as ЖАНЛИСЪ, СТАЛЬ, &c.; thus we say: у Госпожи Жанлисъ, *at the house of Mrs Genlis*; сочиненіе Госпожи Сталь, *the work of Mrs Staël*.

Special  
rules.

1. Nouns ending in *ѣнокъ*, signifying the young ones of animals, are masculine in the singular; but in the plural they preserve the Slavonian inflection *ята* or *ата*, and are neuter. (See paradigm 4).

2. Nouns ending in *янинъ* or *анинъ* and in *яринъ* or *аринъ*, have peculiar inflections in the plural. (See paradigm 5).

3. In the *instrumental singular* of the III declension, *ою* is contracted in *ой, ею* in *ей*, and *ію* in *ію*; thus we say: РУКОЮ or РУКОЮ, *with the hand*; ЗЕМЛЮЮ or ЗЕМЛЮЮ, *by the earth*. (See paradigm 28). In the same manner the *instrumental plural* ЯМИ of some nouns in *в* is contracted in *ими*, the accent being in such cases placed on the last syllable; thus we say: ЛЮДЬМИ, *with men*; ДВЕРЬМИ, *by gates*; ЛОШАДЬМИ, *with horses* (and not ЛЮДІАМИ, ДВЕРІАМИ, ЛОШАДІАМИ).

4. The *genitive singular* of masculine nouns in *з, в, ѣ*, signifying divisible matter, often takes, especially in familiar language, the inflection *у* and *ю* of the dative (instead of *а* and *я*); thus we say: ФУНТЪ САХАРУ, *a pound of sugar*; ЛОЖКА ДѢТЮ, *a spoonful of tar*; ЧАШКА ЧАЮ, *a cup of tea*. The same

inflection (instead of *н*) is also found in the *prepositional singular*, accompanied with the preposition *въ* or *на*, in some nouns in *ъ* and *ѣ*, and in such cases takes the tonic accent; thus we say: *въ саду́*, in the garden; *на краю́*, on the brink.

§. In *compound substantives*, the first word is also declined, if in its junction with the second it has preserved the termination of its nominative singular; thus *Ца́рьградъ*, *Constantinople*, is declined according to the 9th and the 1st paradigm: *Г. Ца́ряграда, Д. Ца́рюграду, I. Ца́ремъградо́мъ, Р. о Ца́рьградѣ*. With respect to the names of towns compounded of the adjectives *новъ* and *бѣлъ*, as *Нѡвгородъ*, *Бѣло́озеро*, and to the common nouns formed of the numeral *полъ*, the *half*: as: *по́лдень*, *midday*; *по́лгода*, *half a year*, we refer the student to our remarks on that subject in the declension of the adjectives and numerals.

30.—By observing the above general and special <sup>Paradigms of the declensions of substantives.</sup> rules we shall be able to decline all the regular nouns of the Russian language according to the following 28 paradigms.

According to the 1st paradigm (зако́нъ) are declined nouns <sup>First declension.</sup> in *ъ* (with the exception of those which belong to the 4 following paradigms), remembering however to change *ы* into *и* after the gutturals (*г, к, х*), and *о* into *е* after the lingual (*ц*), and observing further, that several nouns of the 1st declension throw the accent on the inflections of the cases, some commencing with the genitive singular, others with the nominative plural, and others again with the genitive plural. Such are:

Ба́рака, the ram. <i>Г. бара́на.</i>	Да́ръ, the gift. <i>Г. дара́; N. пл. дары́.</i>
Ве́ртепъ, the cavern, <i>верте́на.</i>	До́лгъ, the debt, <i>до́лга; долги́.</i>
Ку́миръ, an idol, <i>куми́ра.</i>	Чи́ня, a rank, <i>чи́на; чини́.</i>
Во́лхвъ, the magician, <i>волхв́а.</i>	Ша́ръ, a ball, <i>ша́ра; шары́.</i>
Вра́гъ, the enemy, <i>врага́.</i>	Бо́гъ, a god; <i>N. пл. бо́ги, Г. бого́въ.</i>
Язы́къ, the tongue, <i>языка́.</i>	Воръ, a robber; <i>во́ры, воро́въ.</i>
Пя́тухъ, a cock, <i>пѣтуха́.</i>	Гро́бъ, a coffin; <i>гро́бы, гробо́въ.</i>
Ме́сяцъ, a month, <i>мѣсяца́.</i>	Ду́бъ, an oak; <i>ду́бы, дубо́въ.</i>
Ку́знецъ, the blacksmith, <i>кузнеца́.</i>	Во́лкъ, the wolf; <i>во́лки, волко́въ.</i>

According to the 2d paradigm (оте́цъ) are declined the nouns in which the vowel *е* or *о* of the nominative is elided in the other cases, observing at the same time the change of *е* into *ѣ* after the consonant *л*, and into *ѣ* after a vowel. Such are:



		S I N G U			
		Nominat. and Vocat.      Genitive.      Dat.      Accus.			
DECLENSIONS.	PARADIGMS:				
DECLENSIONS.	PARADIGMS:				
DECLENSIONS.	PARADIGMS:				

With respect to the use of the *tonic accent* in the declensions, the following rules are to be observed.

1. Nouns of the 1st declension commonly preserve through all the cases both of the singular and plural, the accent of the nominative singular. But most polysyllabic nouns, the termination of which is accented, transfer the accent to the inflection of the genitive, and keep it on this syllable through all the other cases. Several monosyllables follow the same rule. Other monosyllables preserve the nominative accent in the singular, but in the plural they transfer it to the inflections of the cases, some in all the cases, others from the genitive downwards.
2. In the 2d declension, the accent serves to distinguish the nominative plural from the genitive singular. On this account, those nouns which in

## SIONS OF REGULAR SUBSTANTIVES.

L A R.			P L U R A L.		
<i>Instrum. Prep.</i>			<i>Nom. and Voc. Genitive. Dative. Accus. Instrum. Prepos.</i>		
омъ . . ѣ . .	законъ-ы . . .	овъ . . амъ . .	амн . . ахъ .		
ёмъ . . ѣ . .	отцъ-и . . .	ёвъ . . амъ . .	амн . . ахъ .		
ёмъ . . ѣ . .	шалаши-и . . .	ёи . . амъ . .	амн . . ахъ .		
омъ . . ѣ . .	телятъ-а . . .	ъ . . амъ . .	амн . . ахъ .		
омъ . . ѣ . .	дворянъ-е . . .	ъ . . амъ . .	амн . . ахъ .		
емъ . . ѣ . .	геро-и . . .	евъ . . ямъ . .	ямн . . ахъ .		
ьёмъ . . ѣ ѣ . .	словъ-и . . .	ьевъ . . ѡмъ . .	ѡмн . . ѡхъ .		
емъ . . и . .	гёни-и . . .	евъ . . ямъ . .	ямн . . ахъ .		
ёмъ . . ѣ . .	королъ-и . . .	ёи . . амъ . .	амн . . ахъ .		
ёмъ . . ѣ . .	огни-и . . .	ёи . . амъ . .	амн . . ахъ .		
омъ . . ѣ . .	словъ-а . . .	ъ . . амъ . .	амн . . ахъ .		
омъ . . ѣ . .	стёклъ-а . . .	стёколъ-ъ . . амъ . .	амн . . ахъ .		
омъ . . ѣ . .	колёчекъ-и . . .	амъ . .	амн . . ахъ .		
емъ . . ѣ . .	моръ-я . . .	ёи . . амъ . .	амн . . ахъ .		
ьёмъ . . ѣ ѣ . .	ружь-я . . .	ёи . . ѡмъ . .	ѡмн . . ѡхъ .		
емъ . . и . .	мнѣни-я . . .	и . . ямъ . .	ямн . . ахъ .		
емъ . . ѣ . .	дѣтцъ-и . . .	ъ . . амъ . .	амн . . ахъ .		
енемъ . . ени	времъ-енъ . . .	ёнъ . . енъ . .	енамн . . енхъ .		
ою . . ѣ . .	корё-и . . .	ъ . . амъ . .	амн . . ахъ .		
ою . . ѣ . .	палкъ-и . . .	палокъ-ъ . . амъ . .	амн . . ахъ .		
ёю . . ѣ . .	возжъ-и . . .	ёи . . амъ . .	амн . . ахъ .		
ею . . ѣ . .	недѣлъ-и . . .	ъ . . ямъ . .	ямн . . ахъ .		
ею . . ѣ . .	пѣснъ-и . . .	пѣсенъ-ъ . . ямъ . .	ямн . . ахъ .		
ею . . ѣ . .	сва-и . . .	и . . ямъ . .	ямн . . ахъ .		
ьёю . . ѣ ѣ . .	судъ-и . . .	ёи . . ѡмъ . .	ѡмн . . ѡхъ .		
ею . . и . .	молни-и . . .	и . . ямъ . .	ямн . . ахъ .		
ію . . и . .	страстъ-и . . .	ёи . . амъ . .	амн . . ахъ .		
ложью . . лжи	лжъ-и . . .	ёи . . амъ . .	амн . . ахъ .		

like {the Nominative, in the names of inanimate beings.  
the Genitive, in the names of animate beings.

singular have the accent on the first syllable, transfer it in the plural to the last; while, on the contrary, those which in the singular have the accent on the last syllable, transfer it in the plural to the first, and keep it on that syllable through all the cases, both of the singular and plural.

3. In the III declension a distinction between the genitive singular and nominative plural only takes place in such nouns in *a* and *я*, as have the accent on the termination. These nouns transfer the accent to the first syllable in the nominative plural, resuming in all the other cases the accent of the singular. Some of these nouns have also in the accusative singular the accent on the first syllable. Among the nouns in *я*, there are several which transfer the accent to the inflections on the cases, from the genitive plural downwards.—The examples to these different rules here follow.

Орёлъ, an eagle, *G.* орла.  
 Ковёръ, a carpet, ковра.  
 Крючокъ, a hook, крючка.  
 Левъ, a lion, льва.  
 Кулёкъ, a sack, кулёка.  
 Илемъ, the elm-tree, ильма.  
 Конёкъ, a skate, конька.  
 Боецъ, a wrestler, бойца.  
 Заяцъ (and заяць), a hare, зайца.  
 Опоёкъ, a calf's skin, опойка.

Багоръ, a hook, *G.* багра.  
 Посолъ, an ambassador, посла.  
 Лобъ, the forehead, лба.  
 Псаломъ, a psalm, псалма.  
 Ротъ, the mouth, рта.  
 Участокъ, a portion, участка.  
 Сонъ, sleep, сна.  
 Уголъ, an angle, угла.  
 Замокъ, a castle, замка.  
 Замокъ, a lock, замка.

According to the 3d paradigm (шалаши) are declined such nouns in *ъ* with a hissing consonant (ж, ч, ш, щ), as form the *genitive plural* in *ей*; such are:

Падёжъ, the case, *G.* падежа.  
 Платёжъ, the payment, платежа.  
 Моржъ, a walrus, моржа.  
 Ежъ, a hedgehog, ежа.  
 Ключъ, the key, ключа.  
 Лучъ, a ray, луча.  
 Кирпичъ, a brick, кирпича.  
 Мечъ, a sword, меча.

Палашъ, the sabre, *G.* палаша.  
 Ландышъ, the mayflower, ландыша.  
 Карандашъ, a pencil, карандаша.  
 Торгашъ, the mercer, торгаша.  
 Плащъ, a mantle, плаща.  
 Лещъ, the bream, леща.  
 Товарищъ, a comrade, товарища.  
 Овощъ, a fruit, овоща.

According to the 4th paradigm (телёнокъ) are declined the names of the young of animals, ending in *ёнокъ*, which, having retained in the plural the Slavonian inflection *ята* (or *ата* after *ю* and *ч*), are neuter and consequently belong, in the singular to the 1st declension, and in the plural to the 2d. Some of these nouns however form their plural regularly in *енки*. Such are:

Ягнёнокъ, a lamb; *N. pl.* ягната.  
 Жеребёнокъ, a foal, жеребята.  
 Цыплёнокъ, a pullet, цыплята.

Ослёнокъ, a young ass; *N. pl.* ослята.  
 Волчонокъ, a wolf's cub; волчата.  
 Медвѣжёнокъ, a bear's cub; медвѣжата.

Поросёнокъ, a little pig; поросята.

Львёнокъ, a lion's whelp; *N. pl.* львёнки.

Котёнокъ, a kitten; котята.  
 Ребёнокъ, a child; ребята

Галчонокъ, a young awl; галчѣнки.  
 Мышёнокъ, a young mouse; мышѣнки.

Also щенёкъ, a pup, *G.* щенка, *N. pl.* щенята and щенки.

According to the 5th paradigm (дворянинъ) are declined nouns in *инъ*, *анинъ*, *яринъ* and *аринъ*, which in the *plural* change *инъ* into *е*, *ъ*, *амъ*, &c.; such are:

Селянинъ, a villager; *N. pl.* селяне. Мрянинъ, a layman, *N. pl.* мряне.  
 Кристьянинъ, a peasant; крестьяне. Поселянинъ, a husbandman; поселяне.

Семьянинъ, the head of a family; <i>N. pl</i> семьяне.	Огнѣщанинъ, a freeman; <i>N. pl</i> огнѣщане.
Россiанинъ, a Russian; Россiяне.	Христiанинъ, a Christian; христiане.
Гражданинъ, a citizen; граждaне.	Боѣринъ, a lord; боѣре.
Мѣщанинъ, a burgher; мѣщане.	Болгаринъ, a Bulgarian; Болгаре.

According to the 6th paradigm (гѣробѣй) are declined the nouns in *ѣй*, with the exception of those in *иѣ* and of some in *ей*, which belong to the two following paradigms.\* Such are:

Покѣй, a room, <i>G.</i> покѣя	Лишѣй, a scab, <i>G.</i> лишѣя.
Злодѣй, a wretch, злодѣя.	Пѣй, a part, пѣя.
Казначѣй, a treasurer, казначѣя.	Бѣй, the combat, <i>G.</i> бѣя; <i>N. pl.</i> бѣи.
Сарѣй, a coach-house, сарѣя.	Рѣй, a swarm, рѣя; роѣ.
Слѣчай, the occasion, слѣчая.	Стрѣй, the rank, стрѣя; строѣ.
Налѣй, a desk, налѣя.	Чѣй, the tea, чѣя; чай.

According to the 7th paradigm (соловѣй) are declined eight nouns in *ей*, as change the *e* of the nominative into *ѣ* in all the other cases. Some Christian names in *иѣ*, in familiar language, are declined in the same manner. Such are:

Воробѣй, a sparrow, <i>G.</i> воробѣя	Чирѣй, a furuncle, <i>G.</i> чирѣя.
Муравѣй, an ant, муравѣя.	Василѣй, Basil, Василѣя.
Ручѣй, a brook, ручѣя.	Григорѣй, Gregory, Григорѣя.
Репѣй, a little ribbon, репѣя	Левонтѣй, Leontius, Левонтѣя.
Улѣй, a bee-hive, улѣя.	Прокѣѣй, Procopius, Прокѣѣя.
Жеребѣй, the lot, жеребѣя.	Игнатѣй, Ignatius, Игнатѣя.

According to the 8th paradigm (гѣниѣй) are declined such nouns in *иѣ*, as take the inflection *и* (instead of *ѣ*) in the *prepositional singular*; such are:

Викарѣй, a vicar, <i>G.</i> викарѣя.	Виночѣрпѣй, a cup-bearer, <i>G.</i> виночѣрпѣя.
Инвентарѣй, an inventory, инвентарѣя.	Меркурѣй, Mercury, Меркурѣя.
Комментарѣй, a commentary, -ментарѣя.	Сѣрпѣй, Sergius, Сѣрпѣя.

Some substantives in *ѣй*, as портнѣй, a tailor; кормчѣй, the pilot, which are only adjectives used as substantives, are declined like the adjectives (§ 40).

According to the 9th paradigm (корѣѣй) are declined the masculine nouns in *ѣй*, with the exception of those which belong to the following paradigm. Such are:

Жѣлудѣй, an acorn, <i>G.</i> жѣлудѣя.	Госудѣй, a sovereign, <i>G.</i> госудѣя.
Колѣдѣй, a well, колѣдѣя.	Олѣй, a stag, олѣя.
Учѣтель, the teacher, учѣтеля.	Медвѣдѣй, a bear, медвѣдѣя.
Сѣболѣй, a sable, сѣболя.	Царѣй, a king, царѣя.
Слѣсарѣй, a lock-smith, слѣсарѣя.	Корѣблѣй, a vessel, корѣблѣя.

Фонарь, a lantern, *G.* фонарь.

Фитиль, a match, фитиль.

Гусь, a goose; *N. pl.* гусь, *G.* гусей.

Голубь, a pigeon; голуби, голубей.

Зверь, a beast; звери, зверей.

Червь, a worm; черви, червей.

According to the 10th paradigm (огóнь) are declined such masculine nouns in *o*, as elide the vowel *e* or *o* in all the other cases; such are:

Камень, a stone, *G.* камня.

• Стебель, a stem, стебля.

Лапоть, a bast shoe, лаптя.

Ремёнь, a thong, ремня.

Кремень, a flint, кремня.

Ломоть, a slice, ломтя.

Кóрень, the root, *N. pl.* корни, *G.* корней.

Угорь, an eel, угря, угрей.

Нóготь, a nail; нóгти, ногтёй.

Кóготь, a claw; кóгти, когтёй.

Пёрстень, a ring; пёрстни, перстней.

Лóкоть, the elbow; лóкти, локтёй.

In the list of masculine nouns in *o*, given in § 23, which elide the vowel *e* or *o* of the nominative, this vowel is printed in *italics*.

Second  
declension.

According to the 11th paradigm (сло́во) are declined the nouns in *o*, and those in *це*, *же*, *че* and *ше* (with the exception of such as belong to the following paradigm, of the diminutives in *ко* and *це* and augmentatives in *ше*), observing however the change of *o* into *e* after the hissing consonants and the lingual (ж, ч, ш, ц), and remarking that several nouns of the II<sup>d</sup> declension transfer in the plural the accent from the first syllable to the last, and *vice versa*. Such are:

Тѣло, the body, *G.* тѣла; *N. pl.* тѣла.

Стадо, a herd, стада; стада,

Зѣркало, a mirror, зѣркала; зеркала

Озеро, a lake, озера; озѣра.

Вино, the wine, вина; вина.

Село, a village, села; сѣла.

Колесо, a wheel, колеса; колѣса.

Долото, a chisel, долота; долóта.

Чáдо, *n.* a child, *G.* and *N. pl.* чáда.

Свѣтíло, a star, свѣтíла.

Мѣнiло, *m.* a changer, мѣнiла.

Лицѣ, the face, *G.* лица; *N. pl.* лица.

Яйцѣ, an egg, яйцá; яйца (*G.* яицъ).

Плечѣ, the shoulder, плечá; плѣча.

Лóже, the couch, *G.* and *N. pl.* лóжа.

Вѣче, an assembly, вѣча.

Жилiще, a dwelling, жилiща.

Зрѣлище, a spectacle, зрѣлища.

Сокровище, a treasure, сокровища.

Гульбище, a promenade, гульбища.

Училище, a school, училища.

Кладбище, a cemetery, кладбища.

According to the 12th paradigm (стеклó) are declined those nouns in *o* and *e*, preceded by two consonants, which usually insert the vowel *e* or *o* in the *genitive plural*, observing at the same time that the nouns in *це* take the vowel *e*, and that the semi-vowel *o* between the two consonants is changed into *e*. Such are:

Рѣбро, a rib; *N. pl.* рѣбра, *G.* рѣберъ.

Пятно, a spot; пятна, пятенъ.

Зерно, a grain; зѣрна, зѣренъ.

Щемло, a vice, *N. pl.* щемла, *G.* щемель.

Сукно, cloth; сýкна, сýконъ.

Окно, the window; óкна, óконъ.

Брёвна, a beam; *N. pl.* брёвна, *G.* Число, a number; *N. pl.* числа, *G.* брёвнѣвъ. чиселъ (and числѣ).

Письмо, a letter; письма, писемъ. Сердце, the heart; сердца, сердецъ.

Полотно, linen; полотна, полотнѣвъ. Кольцо, a ring; кольца, колецъ.

Сѣдло, a saddle; сѣдла, сѣделъ. Крыльцо, a step; крыльца, крылецъ.

It is necessary to observe that in nouns in *здо*, *сто*, *ско* and *тсто*, the genitive plural is formed without the insertion of any letter; e. g. ГНѢЗДО, a nest; МѢСТО, a place; ВОЙСКО, an army; ЧУВСТВО, the feeling,—*gen. plur.* ГНѢЗДЪ, МѢСТЪ, ВОЙСКЪ, ЧУВСТВЪ.

According to the 13th paradigm (КОЛѢЧКО) are declined the diminutives in *ко* and *це*, which form their *nominative plural* in *и* (for those in *ко*) or in *ы* (for those in *це*), inserting the vowel *e* in the genitive plural. Such are:

Сердечко, little heart; *pl.* сердечки, Дѡнцѣ, little bottom; *pl.* дѡнцы, -дѣчекъ. [-тѣчекъ. дѡнецъ.

Мѣстечко, little place; мѣстѣчки, Дѡльцѣ, mouth piece; дѡльцы,

Крылышко, little wing; крылышки, дѡлецъ.

-лышекъ. Рыльцѣ, little snout; рыльцы, рылецъ.

Домишко, little house; домишки, Полотѣнцѣ, a towel; полотѣнцы,

-мишекъ. -тѣнецъ.

According to the 14th paradigm (МОРЕ) are declined those nouns in *ле* and *ре*, which form their *genitive plural* in *ей*; e. g.

Поле, the field; *G.* поля, *N. pl.* поля, *G.* полѣй.

Горе, a grief; горя (not used in the *plural*).

According to the 15th paradigm (РУЖЬѢ) are declined those nouns in *ве* and in *ее*, which change in the *genitive plural*, *ве* and *ее* into *ей*, and *ве*, a contraction of *ие*, into *ий*. Such are:

Жильѣ, a floor; *pl.* жилья, *G.* жильей. Платьѣ, a coat, *G. pl.* платьей.

Коньѣ, a lance; конья, копей. Верхѡвье, a spring, верхѡвей.

Питьѣ, a beverage; питья, питей. Весѣлье, an enjoyment, весѣлий.

Лезвѣй, the edge; лѣзвѣя, лѣзвѣй. Воскресѣнье, Sunday, воскресѣній.

Острѣй, the point, edge; острѣя, острѣй. Повѣрье, a belief, повѣрій.

The following nouns in *ве* form their *genitive plural* in *вевъ*: подмастерье *m.*, the journeyman; кѡшанье, a dish; помѣстье, a domain; ѡстье, mouth (of a river); варѣнье, a preserve.

According to the 16th paradigm (МНѢНІЕ) are declined nouns in *іе*, which form their *genitive plural* in *ій*, and which in the *prepositional singular* take the inflection *и* (instead of *ю*). In

these nouns the accent of the nominative plural is the same as that of the genitive singular. Such are:

Здѣніе, an edifice, <i>G. and N. pl. зданія.</i>	Оружіе, an arm, <i>G. and N. pl. оружія.</i>
Знаніе, knowledge, <i>знанія.</i>	Явленіе, an apparition, <i>явленія. [нія.]</i>
Желаніе, the desire, <i>желанія.</i>	Сообщеніе, a communication, <i>сообщенія.</i>
Понятіе, an idea, <i>понятія.</i>	Сомнѣніе, the doubt, <i>сомнѣнія.</i>
Собраніе, an assembly, <i>собранія</i>	Владѣніе, the possession, <i>владѣнія.</i>
Растеніе, a plant, <i>растенія.</i>	Созвѣздіе, a constellation, <i>созвѣздія.</i>

According to the 17th paradigm (дѣтище) are declined the augmentative nouns, which form their plural in *и, ей, &c.*; e. g.

Домѣще, great house; <i>pl. домѣщя, -щей.</i>	Століще, great table; <i>pl. століщя, -щей.</i>
Дворѣще, great court, <i>дворѣщя.</i>	Козліще, <i>m.</i> great he-goat; <i>козліщя.</i>
Мужичѣще, <i>m.</i> big peasant, <i>мужичѣщя.</i>	Покѣище, great room; <i>покѣищя.</i>

Some substantives in *ое*, as *животное, an animal*; *морозное, ice-creams*, which are only adjectives used as substantives, are declined like the adjectives (§ 40).

According to the 18th paradigm (врѣмя) are declined nouns in *мя*. In the plural the accent is transferred to the last syllable. Such are:

Брѣмя, the burden, <i>N. pl. бремена.</i>	Плѣмя, the race, <i>N. pl. племена.</i>
Вымя, an udder, <i>вымена.</i>	Стрѣмя, the stirrup, <i>стремена.</i>
Имя, the name, <i>имена.</i>	Тѣмя, the sinciput, <i>тѣмена.</i>
Пламя, the flame (no <i>plural</i> ).	Знамя, the flag, <i>знамена and знамена.</i>

By the same paradigm is declined *сѣмя, seed, plur. сѣмена*, which however has retained in the genitive plural the Slavonian inflection *сѣмянъ* (instead of *сѣмѣнъ*), to be distinguished from the proper name *Семѣнъ, Simeon*.

Third  
declension

According to the 19th paradigm (корова) are declined the nouns in *а* (excepting such as belong to the two following paradigms). It is necessary to observe the change of *ы* into *и* after the guttural and hissing consonants (*г, к, х; ж, ч, ш*), and of *о* into *е* after the hissings and the lingual (*ж, ч, ш; ц*), and also to remark that several nouns of the IIIrd declension in *а* and *я* transfer the accent in the nominative plural, and some of them also in the accusative singular, from the last syllable to the first. Such are:

Рѣба, the fish, <i>G. and N. pl. рыбы.</i>	Звѣзда, a star, <i>G. звѣзды; N. pl. звѣзды.</i>
Шляпа, a hat, шляпы.	Жена, the wife, жены; жѣны.
Побѣда, victory, побѣды.	Слуга, a servant, слугѣ; слуги.
Рѣза, a rose, рѣзы.	Рѣка, a river, рѣкѣ; рѣки.
Книга, a book, книги.	Вода, water, <i>G. воды, A. воду, N. pl. воды.</i>
Собака, a dog, собаки.	Зима, winter, зимы, зиму; зѣмы.
Муха, a fly, мухи.	Рука, the hand, руцѣ, руку; руки.
Кожа, the skin, кожи.	Голова, the head, головы, голову; головы.
Туча, the cloud, тучи.	Сковорода, a frying pan, сковороду, -роды.
Груша, a pear, груши.	
Вдова, a widow, <i>G. вдовы; N. pl. вдовы.</i>	

According to the 20th paradigm (пѣлка) are declined most nouns in *a* preceded by two consonants, or by one consonant and *ь* or *ѣ*, which insert the vowel *e* or *o* in the *genitive plural*, *ь* and *ѣ* then changing into *e*. Such are:

Ложка, the spoon; <i>G. pl. ложекъ.</i>	Коймѣ, the hem; <i>G. pl. коёмъ.</i>
Сосна, the fir; сосенъ.	Копѣйка, a copeck; копѣекъ.
Сказка, a tale; сказокъ.	Рѣйна, a ship's yard; рѣенъ.
Шапка, a cap; шапокъ.	Свадьба, the marriage; свадебъ.
Утка, a duck; утокъ.	Судьба, fate; <i>N. pl. судьбы, G. судьбъ.</i>
Овца, a sheep; <i>A. овцу, G. pl. овецъ.</i>	Тюрьма, the prison; тюрьмы, тюремъ.
Доска, a plank; доску, досокъ.	Серьга, an ear-ring; серьги, серёгъ.

The vowels *o* or *e* are inserted solely to facilitate the pronunciation; for if the two or three consonants in juxta-position can be articulated without difficulty, the insertion does not take place. Thus: просьба, *the demand*; староста, *a bailiff*; верста, *a werst*; жертва, *a victim*, form their *genitive plural*: просьбъ, старостъ, вѣрствъ, жертвъ. The *genitive plural* of война, *war*, is войнъ, and that of тайна, *a sacrament*, is таинъ.

According to the 21th paradigm (возжа) are declined nouns in *жа, ча, ша*, preceded by a consonant, as also those in *ща*, which form their *genitive plural* in *ей*. Such are:

Ханжа, a bigot; <i>G. pl. ханжей.</i>	Лѣвшѣ, a left-handed person; <i>G. pl. лѣвша, a squirrel; лѣвшей. [лѣвшей.]</i>
Парча, brocade; парчей.	Рѣща, a grove; рѣщей.
Прѣтча, a proverb; прѣтчей.	Толща, the thickness; толщей.
Каланча, a belfry; каланчей.	

In the same manner are declined юноша, *young man*, and паша, *a pasha*, *G. pl. юношей* and пашей.

According to the 22th paradigm (недѣля) are declined nouns in *я*, preceded by a consonant, which form their *genitive plural*



in *ѳ*, with the exception of some which form it in *ей*, and others in *ѳ* and *ей*. Such are:

Баня, the bath; *Г. пл.* бань.  
 Пуля, a ball; пуль.  
 Буря, a tempest; бурь.  
 Гиря, a weight; гирь.  
 Дыня, a melon; дынь.  
 Богиня, a goddess; богинь.  
 Пустыня, a desert; пустынь.  
 Потеря, a loss, потерь.

Дядя, the uncle; *Г. пл.* дядей.  
 Броня, a cuirass; брониь.  
 Пёня, a fine; пёней.  
 Ноздря, a nostril; ноздрей.  
 Стезя, a footpath; стезей.  
 Доля, a portion; долей and доль.  
 Заря, the dawn; зарей and зарь.  
 Тоня, fishing-net; тоней and тонь.

According to the 23th paradigm (пѣсня) are declined the nouns in *ля* and *ня*, preceded by another consonant, by *ѳ* or by *й*, which insert in the *genitive plural* the vowel *ѳ* (one single noun takes the vowel *о*), or change *ѳ* and *й* into *ѳ*. Such are:

Сабля, a sabre; *Г. пл.* сабель  
 Басня, a fable, басень  
 Башня, a tower; башень.  
 Деревня, a village; деревень. *с*  
 Кровля, a roof; кровель  
 Пётля, a running-knot; петель.  
 Земля, the earth, земель (*А. с. зѣмлю*).

Обѣдня, the mass; *Г. пл.* обѣдней.  
 Кухня, the kitchen, кухонь.  
 Спальня, a dormitory; спальень. [лень.  
 Богатѣльня, an almshouse; богатѣль.  
 Швальня, a sewing room; швальень.  
 Бойня, a slaughter-house; бонень.  
 Водопоѣйня, a horse-pond; водопонень.

The substantive земля takes, in the prepositional singular with *на*, the Slavonian inflection *на землѣ*, *on the earth*, to be distinguished for *на землѣ*, *on the ground*.

According to the 24th paradigm (свѣя) are declined those nouns in *я* preceded by a vowel (with the exception of those in *ія*), which form their *genitive plural* in *й*; such are:

Вѣя, the neck; *Г. пл.* вѣй.  
 Лявѣя, the hip; лявѣй.  
 Струя, a current, струй.  
 Верея, a post; верей.  
 Шея, the neck; шей.  
 Змѣя, a serpent; змѣй.  
 Соя, the soy; сой  
 я, an armour; сбруй.

The names of foreign towns, ending in *оа* and *уа*, are declined in the same manner, except in the *accusative*, which they form in *у* (and not in *ю*); e. g. Гѣнуа, Genoa, *А. Гѣнуу*. Мантуа, Mantua, *Мантуу*. Падуа, Padua, *Падуу*. Гоа, Goa, *Гѳу*.

Some nouns in *оя* and *ля*, as: кладовѣя, a storehouse; передняя, an antechamber, which are only adjectives used as substantives, are declined like adjectives (§ 40).

According to the 25th paradigm (судѣя) are declined the nouns in *ѣя*, which in the *genitive plural* change this termination into *ей*, and if it is contracted from *ія*, into *й*. Such are:

Лады́я, a boat; *G. pl.* ладе́й.  
Скамь́я, a bench; скаме́й.  
Стать́я, an article; стате́й.  
Свинь́я, a pig; свине́й.  
Семь́я, the family; семе́й.

Гость́я, a female guest; *G. pl.* госте́й.  
Лгу́нья, a female liar; лгу́ней.  
Сва́тья, a female relation; сва́тей.  
Ке́лья, a cell; ке́лий.  
Игу́менья, an abbess; игу́меней.

According to the 26th paradigm (мо́лнія) are declined the nouns in *ия*, which in the *dative* and *prepositional singular* take the inflection *у* (instead of *ю*), and which form their *genitive plural* in *иѹ*. Such are:

А́рмія, an army, <i>D.</i> а́рміи; <i>G. pl.</i> а́рміи.	Стих́ия, an element, <i>D.</i> стих́ии; <i>G. pl.</i> стих́иѹ.
Ко́пия, a copy, ко́пии; ко́пий.	Коме́дія, a comedy, коме́дин; коме́дий.
Ли́лія, a lily, ли́ліи; ли́лій.	Траге́дія, a tragedy, траге́дин; траге́дий.
Ли́нія, a line, ли́нии; ли́ний.	Вит́ія, an orator, вит́ии; вит́иѹ.

According to the 27th paradigm (стра́сть) are declined the feminine nouns in *ь*, observing at the same time the change of *я* into *а* after the hissing consonants (ж, ч, ш, щ), and remarking that several of these nouns transfer in the plural the accent to the casual inflections, from the genitive plural downwards. Such are:

Ткань, a tissue; <i>G. pl.</i> ткане́й.	Бровь, an eyebrow; <i>N. pl.</i> брови, <i>G.</i> брове́й.
Печа́ть, a seal; печате́й.	Кисть, a tuft; кисти́, кисте́й.
Крова́ть, a bedstead; крове́й.	Вѣтвь, a branch, вѣтви, вѣтве́й.
Ель, a fir; е́лей.	Дверь, the door; двере́й ( <i>т. дверьми</i> ).
Свирѣ́ль, a pipe; свирѣ́лей.	Лоша́дь, a horse; лоша́дей ( <i>т. дыми</i> ).
Ладо́нь, the palm of the hand; ладо́ней.	Плеть, a whip; плете́й ( <i>т. плетями</i> ).
О́сень, the autumn; осене́й.	Ночь, the night, ноче́й; <i>D.</i> ноча́мъ.
Мече́ть, a mosque; мече́тей.	Печь, a stove, пече́й; печамъ.
Боля́знь, a malady; боля́зней.	Мышь, a mouse, мыше́й; мышамъ.
Добродѣ́тель, virtue; добродѣ́телей.	Вещь, a thing, веще́й; вещамъ.

According to the 28th paradigm (ложь) are declined five nouns in *ь*, which elide the vowel *о* of the nominative in the other cases, except in the instrumental singular; these are:

Вошь, a louse, <i>G.</i> вши, <i>I.</i> во́шью.	Любо́вь, love, <i>G.</i> любви́, <i>I.</i> любове́ью.
Рожь, rye, ржи, ро́жью.	Церко́вь, the church, це́ркви, це́рквю.

The noun це́рковь takes, in the *dative*, *instrumental* and *prepositional plural*, the hard inflection *амъ, ами, ахъ*: церкв́амъ, церкв́ами, о церкв́ахъ. Любо́вь, used as a Christian name, retains the vowel through all the cases, *G.* Любо́ви, &c.

Irregular  
nouns.

§1. — The *irregular* nouns are such as take in some cases an inflection different to what they ought to have, according to the termination of their nominative singular; or such as form their plural in a particular manner.

1. Several nouns in *ъ* and *о* take in the *nominative plural* the inflection *а, я*, with the tonic accent (instead of *ы, у*), while the genitive remains in *овъ, овъ, ей*, and the other cases regular. Such are:

Берегъ, the shore, <i>pl.</i> берега, береговъ.	Погребъ, a cellar, <i>pl.</i> погреба, -бовъ.
Бокъ, the flank, бока	Пологъ, a curtain, полога
Вечеръ, the evening, вечера	Профессоръ, a professor, профессора.
Голосъ, the voice, голоса	Рукавъ, a sleeve, рукава
Городъ, the town, города.	Флюгеръ, a weather-cock, флюгера.
Докторъ, a doctor, доктора	Шомполъ, a ramrod, шомпола
Жерновъ, a millstone, жернова	Хлѣвъ, a stall, хлѣва
Катеръ, a cutter, катера	Холодъ, the cold, холода
Киверъ, a shako, кивера	Сторожъ, a guard, сторожа, сторожей.
Колоколъ, a bell, колокола.	Вѣсель, a bill of exchange, -ля, -лей.
Кучеръ, a coachman, кучера	Вѣнзель, a monogram, вензеля.
Лугъ, a meadow, луга.	Егеръ, a hunter, егеря
Лѣсъ, a forest, лѣса	Крендель, a cracknel, кренделя.
Мастеръ, a master, мастера	Лѣкарь, a surgeon, лекаря
Мичманъ, a midshipman, мичмана.	Писаръ, a writer, писаря.
Островъ, an island, острова	Флигель, wing of a house, флигеля.
Парусъ, a sail, паруса	Штемпель, a stamp, штампеля.
Поваръ, a cook, повара	Якоръ, an anker, якоря.

In the same manner тетеревъ, a grouse, has in *N. pl.* тетерева; but in the genitive тетеревей (instead of *тетеребовъ*).

2. Some nouns in *ъ, о, о*, form their *plural* in *ья, овъ, ямъ*, &c., changing the gutturals *з* and *к* before *о* into *ж* and *ч*. Such are:

Братъ, the brother, <i>pl.</i> братья, -евъ.	Пруть, a twig, <i>pl.</i> прутья, прутьевъ.
Брусъ, a beam, брусья	Полосъ, a slide, полосы.
Клинь, a wedge, клинья.	Стулъ, a chair, стулья.
Клокъ, a lock, клоки	Зять, son-in-law, зятья.
Колосъ, an ear, колосья.	Звенó, a link, звенья
Колъ, a stake, колья.	Крыло, a wing, крылья
Комъ, a heap, комья.	Перó, a feather, перья.
Коньмá, a sledge-bar, коньмья.	Полѣно, a billet of wood, полѣнья.
Кочанъ, a head of cabbage, кочанья.	Помелó, a malkin, помелья.
Лубъ, a sheet of bark, лубья	Шило, an awl, шилья.

3. Some nouns in *ъ* have their *genitive plural* like the *nominative singular* (instead of *овъ*), e. g.

Алтынь, three corecks; <i>pl.</i> алтыны,	Рѣкрутъ, a recruit; <i>pl.</i> рѣкруты, рѣкрутъ.
алтынь.	Сапогъ, a boot; сапоги, сапогъ.
Аршинъ, an ell; аршины, аршинъ	Солдатъ, a soldier; солдаты, солдатъ
Гренадёръ, a grenadier; гренадёры,	Турокъ, a Turk; Тѹрки, Тѹрокъ.
-дёръ.	Уланъ, a hulan; уланы, уланъ
Драгунъ, a dragoon; драгуны, дра-	Цыганъ, a gipsy; цыганы, цыганъ.
гунъ.	Чулокъ, a stocking; чулки, чулокъ.
Пудъ a pood; пуды, пудъ	Грузинъ, a Georgian; Грузины,
Разъ, a time; разы, разъ	Грузинъ.

We can however say regularly пять пудовъ, *five poods*; нѣсколько рѣкрутовъ, *some recruits*. The substantive человекъ, *man*, has also the genitive plural like the nominative singular, but only in junction with a numeral, as пять человекъ, *five men*; in all other cases it is regular; e. g. друзьяи человекъ, *the friends of the men* — The substantive сажень, *a toise*, has likewise in the genitive plural сажень, the accent being transposed; and день, *the day*, in familiar language, takes the same inflection when in junction with a numeral; e. g. семь дней, *seven days* (instead of семь днеи).

4. The following nouns form their *plural* in different ways.

Глазъ, the eye, { have *a, ѡ, амъ*, &c. глаза, глазъ, глазамъ; волоса,  
Волосъ, a hair, { волосъ, волосамъ (and also regularly волосы).

Баринъ, a lord, { change *инъ* into *a, ѡ, амъ, ами, азъ*: бѣра, баръ,  
Господинъ, master, { бѣрамъ; господѣ, господѣ, господамъ; Татара (and  
Татаринъ, a Tartar. { Татѣры), Татаръ, Татарамъ, &c.

Хозяинъ, a housekeeper, *plur.* хозяйева, хозяйевъ, хозяйевамъ, &c.

Шуринъ, a brother-in-law, *plur.* шурья, шурьевъ, шурьямъ, &c.

Другъ, a friend, { have their plural in *ья, ей, ѡамъ*, &c. (другъ changes  
Князь, a prince, { *ъ* into *з*): друзьяи, друзѣй, друзьямъ; князьяи, князѣй;  
Мужъ, a husband, { мужьяи, мужѣй, &c. The latter, in the sense of *man*,  
is regular: мѹжи, мужѣй, мужьямъ, &c.

Кумъ, a godfather. { form their plural in the same way by inserting the  
Сватъ, a kinsman, { syllable *овъ*: кумовьяи, кумовѣй; сватовьяи, сватовѣй;  
Сынъ, the son, { сыновьяи, сыновѣй, &c. Сынъ, with a *figurative* mean-  
ing, is regular: сыныи, сыновъ, &c.

Сосѣдъ, a neighbour, { take in the plural the soft inflection *и, ей, ѡамъ*,  
Холопъ, a bondman, { &c.: сосѣди, сосѣдѣй, сосѣдыамъ (and also regular  
Чѣртъ, the devil, { сосѣды, сосѣдовъ); холопи, холопей; чѣрти, чѣртѣй,  
чѣртамъ, &c.

Солнце, the sun, { take the masculine termination: *и, овъ, амъ*, or *и*,  
Облако, a cloud, { *овъ, амъ*, &c.: солнцы, солнцевъ; облаки, облаковъ  
Очко, a pip, point, { (and also regular: облака, облакъ); очки, очковъ;  
Ушко, a handle, { ушкии, ушковъ, ушкамъ, &c.

Вѣко, the eyelid, { form their plural in *и, ѡ, амъ*, &c.: вѣки, вѣкъ, вѣкамъ;  
Яблоко, an apple, { яблоки, яблокъ (and яблоковъ)

Небо, <sup>6</sup> heaven, Чудо, a wonder,	{ have in the plural: небеса, небеса́, небеса́мъ; чудеса, чудеса́, чудеса́мъ, &c. Небо, in the sense of <i>palate</i> , has no plural, and чудо, signifying <i>a monster</i> , is regular: чуда, чудъ, чудамъ, &c.
Око, the eye, Ухо, the ear,	{ form their plural in и, ей, амъ, with the permutation of the consonant очн, очей, очамъ, очамн; ушн, ушей, ушамъ, ушамн (instead of ушамн). This inflection is properly the Slavonian dual, the plural, which is sometimes used in poetry, is очеса, ушеса́
Дитя́, a child,	{ which in the singular has preserved the Slavonian declension G. D. and P. дитяти, I. дитя́темъ and дитя́тѣю, has in plural N. дѣти, G. and A. дѣтѣй, D. дѣтямъ, I. дѣтми́, P. о дѣтяхъ

Курица, a hen, *plur.* куры, куръ, курамъ, &c

Слюба, the slaver, *plur.* слюби, слюбѣй, слюбия́мъ, &c., with the soft inflection.

5. Some nouns have a double inflection in the <sup>6</sup>*plural*, the one regular, the other irregular.

a) Some have two inflections in the nominative only, and without any difference in the meaning of the word; such are:

Вѣкъ, an age, <i>pl.</i> вѣки and вѣка́,	По́ясъ, girdle, <i>pl.</i> поясы and пояса́,
вѣко́въ.	-со́въ
Го́дь, a year, го́ды and го́да, годо́въ	Ро́гъ, a horn, ро́ги and ро́га, ро́го́въ
До́мъ, a house, до́мы and до́ма, домо́въ	Снѣ́гъ, snow, снѣ́ги and снѣ́га, снѣ́го́въ
Ко́рпусъ, body, ко́рипусы and ко́рпуса,	Сто́гъ, a stack, сто́ги and сто́га, сто́го́въ
-со́въ	
Ку́полъ, cupola, ку́полы and купо́ла,	Стру́гъ, a bark, стру́ги and стру́га, [-мо́въ
-ло́въ	-го́въ
Ме́дъ, honey, ме́ды and ме́да, медо́въ	Тѣ́ремъ, a room, тѣ́ремы and тѣ́рема, [-мо́въ
О́корокъ, a ham, о́корки and о́горока,	Кра́й, the brink, край and край, крае́въ
-о́въ	

b) Others have two inflections through all the cases, the irregular inflection being used where the substantive has a collective meaning; such are:

Бато́гъ, a stick, <i>pl.</i> батогѣ́, батого́въ, and бато́жья, бато́жьевъ, &c.
Вну́къ, the grandson, вну́ки, вну́ковъ, and вну́чата, вну́чатъ, &c
Крю́къ, a hook, крю́ки, крюко́въ, and крю́чья, крю́чьевъ
Обо́дъ, a felloe, обо́ды, ободо́въ, and обо́дья, обо́дьевъ.
Лоску́тъ, a shred, лоску́ты, лоску́товъ, and лоску́тья, лоску́тьевъ
Стру́пъ, a scurf, стру́пы, стру́повъ, and стру́пья, стру́пьевъ
Су́къ, a branch, су́ки, су́ковъ, and су́чья, су́чьевъ
Че́репъ, a potsherd, черепа́, черепо́въ, and чере́пья, чере́пьевъ.
Во́лдырь, <i>m.</i> a tubercle; во́лдыри́, во́лдырей, and во́лдырья, во́лдырьевъ
Ка́мень, <i>m.</i> a stone; ка́мни, ка́мней, and ка́мѣнья, ка́мѣньевъ.

Корень, *m.* a root; корни, корней, and коренья, кореньевъ.

Пузырь, *m.* a bladder; пузырё, пузырёй, and пузырья, пузырёвъ.

Пупырь, *m.* a pimple; пупырё, пупырёй, and пупырья, пупырёвъ.

Уголь, *m.* the charcoal; углѣ, углѣй, and уголья, угольевъ.

Дерево, a tree; дерева, деревъ, and деревья, деревьевъ.

Дыръ, a hole; дыры, дыръ, and дырья, дырёвъ.

Щель, *f.* a chink; щели, щелей, and щельевъ.

c) Others again have two inflections with totally different meanings; such are:

Зубъ, a tooth (in the mouth), *pl.* зѹбы, зубовъ, and tooth (of a saw), зѹбья, зѹбьевъ.

Капля, a drop (of water), капли, капель, and drops (in medicine), капля, каплей.

Листъ, a leaf (of paper), листы, листовъ, and a leaf (of a tree), листья, листьевъ.

Мужъ, a man, мѹже, мужей, and a husband, мужья, мужей.

Мѣхъ, a fur, мѣхѣ, мѣховъ, and a pair of bellows, мѣха, мѣховъ.

Образъ, the form, образы, образовъ, and an image, образа, образовъ.

Поводъ, a motive, поводы, поводовъ, and a rein, поводья, поводьевъ.

Сѹдно, a vessel (utensil), сѹдны, сѹденъ, and a vessel (ship), суда, судовъ.

Хлѣбъ, a bread, хлѣбы, хлѣбовъ, and a corn, хлѣба, хлѣбовъ.

Цвѣтъ, a flower, цвѣты, цвѣтовъ, and a colour, цвѣта, цвѣтовъ.

d) Lastly there is one substantive which in the plural has three inflections, a different meaning being conveyed by each; viz.

Колѣно, { *a tribe, pl.* колѣна, колѣнъ, колѣнамъ, &c.  
           { *the knee, pl.* колѣни, колѣней, колѣнямъ, &c.  
           { *a joint (of a plant), pl.* колѣнья, колѣньевъ, колѣньямъ, &c.

6. The declension of the following nouns is quite irregular:

Господъ, the Lord, { is declined like a noun in *ъ*, with the hard inflection  
                           { *G.* Господа, *D.* Господу, *I.* Господомъ; the *vocative*  
                           { is: ГОПОДИ.

Христосъ, Christ, { cuts off in all the other cases the syllable *ос*: *G.* Христѣ,  
                           { *D.* Христѹ, *I.* Христомъ, *P.* о Христѣ, *V.* Христѣ.

Дочь, a daughter, { insert in the inflections of the cases the syllable *ер*.  
 Мать, the mother, { *G.* and *D.* дочери и матери, *I.* дочерью и матерью,  
                           { *plur. N.* дочери и матери, *G.* дочерей и матерей,  
                           { *I.* дочерьми и матерями, &c.

Пламень, flame, { although masculine, take in the *genitive, dative* and  
 Путь, the way. { *prepositional* singular the feminine inflection *и*: пламени,  
                           { пути; but the instrumental case is regular (пламенемъ,  
                           { путёмъ).

### EXERCISES IN THE DECLENSION OF SUBSTANTIVES.

Nominative    The master of the garden and the mistress of the house.  
and  
Genitive.    Хозяи́нъ            садъ            и            хозяйка            домъ.

The garden of the master and the house of the mistress.  
Садъ            хозяи́нъ            и            домъ            хозяйка.

The roaring of the lions; the song of the nightingale; the  
Рыка́нiе            левъ;            пѣнiе            соловѣй;

bellowing of the bull, of the ox and of the cow; the neighing  
Мыча́нiе            быкъ,            волъ и            коро́ва;            ржа́нiе

of the horses; the barking of the dog; the cooing of the pigeons;  
лоша́дъ f;            лай            соба́ка;            воркова́нiе \*            го́лубъ m;

the cawing of the crows; the croaking of the frogs; the howling  
ка́рканiе            во́ронъ;            ква́канiе            лягу́шка;            вой

of the wolf; the buzzing of the bees, of the cock-chafers and  
волкъ;            жу́жа́нiе            пче́ла,            жу́къ            и

of the flies; the bleating of the rams and of the ewes. A chimney  
му́ха;            бле́янiе            бара́нъ и            овца́.            Ка́минъ

without fire; windows without panes; groats without butter;  
безъ о́гонь m;            окно́            безъ сте́кло;            ка́ша            безъ

saddles without stirrups; a charge without ball; islands and  
сѣдло́            безъ стре́мя;            за́рядъ            безъ пу́ля;            о́стровъ и

meadows without trees; cooks, coachmen and labourers without  
лугъ            безъ де́рево;            по́варъ,            куче́рь и            рабо́тникъ безъ

work; children without mother; soldiers without muskets;  
рабо́та;            дитя́            безъ ма́ть;            солда́тъ            безъ ру́жьё;

muskets without flints; a statue without arms and without  
ру́жьё безъ кре́мёнь m;            стату́я            безъ рука́ и            безъ

ears; young bears and young lions without hair; vessels  
у́хо;            медвѣ́женокъ и            львѣ́нокъ            безъ шерсть f;            кора́бль m

without hammocks; ships without oars; tea without sugar and  
безъ            ко́йка;            су́дно безъ весло́;            чай            безъ са́харъ и

without cream. A bunch of pens; a dozen of cups, of plates  
 безъ сливки *f*. Пукъ перо; дюжина чашка, тарелка

and of glasses; five scores of trouts; half a score of melons;  
 стаканы; сотня форель *f*; десятокъ дыня;

a quantity of geese, of ducks and of swans; herds of cattle;  
 множество гусь *m*, утка и лебедь *m*; стадо скотъ;

studs of horses. The men of antiquity, and the husbands  
 табунъ лошадь *f*. Мужъ древность и мужъ

of the wives. The flowers of the gardens and the colours  
 женá. Цветъ садъ и цветъ

of the rainbow. The leaves of paper and the leaves of the trees.  
 радуга. Листъ бумага и листъ дерево.

The teeth of the mouth and the teeth of a comb. The tribes  
 зубъ во (*prop.*) ротъ и зубъ у гребень *m*. Колѣно

of the Israelites, the knees of a man, and the joints of plants.  
 Израильтянинъ, колѣно у человекъ, и колѣно растѣнiе.

The taking of herrings on the coasts of America has been very  
 ловъ сельдь *f* у берегъ Америка былъ очень

profitable to the English, the Swedes, the Dutch and  
 выгоденъ для (*gen.*) Англичанинъ, Шведъ, Голландецъ и

the French.

Французъ.

Advice to friends. Glory to God. Woe to the enemies. *Nominative*  
 Советъ другъ. Слава Богъ. Горе врагъ. *and Dative.*

The general order to the troops. Obedience to the laws. Give

Приказъ войско. Повиновѣнiе законъ. Дай

food to the geese, to the hens, to the pigeons and to the  
 всть гусь *m*, курица, голубъ *m* и

little dogs. To act conformably to the laws of honour.  
 щенокъ. Поступать соотвѣтственно правило честь.

To live according to his situation. A law given as well  
 Жить прилично состоянiе. Законъ, данный какъ



for the nobles as for the citizens. To be against the wishes  
 дворянинъ, такъ и мѣщанинъ. Противиться желаніе  
 of the children, and the desire of the parents. The books,  
 дитя, и воля родитель. Книжа,

the pens and the papers belong to the scholars, and not  
 перо и тетрадь принадлежатъ ученикъ, а не  
 to the masters. The fields and the meadows belong to the  
 учитель. Поле и лугъ принадлежатъ

father and to the mother, and the gardens, as well as the forests  
 отецъ и мать, а садъ, какъ и лѣсъ,

to the sons and to the daughters. To be agreeable to the men  
 сынъ и дочь. Нравиться мужчѣна

and to be disagreeable to the women. The verdure is agreeable  
 и не нравиться жѣнщина. Зелень нравится

to the eyes. The pictures please the sisters and the flowers  
 глазъ. Картина нравятся сестра, а цвѣтъ

the brothers. Useful to the country; agreeable to God and  
 братъ. Пользныи отечество; пріятныи Богъ и

to men; faithful to the sovereign; dear to friends; agreeable  
 люди; вѣрныи государь; любезныи другъ; милыи

to children. Man is known by his face, by his voice, by  
 дитя. Человѣкъ узнается по лицѣ, по голосу, по

his figure, by his walk and by the motions of his body. Tourists  
 ростъ, по походка и по тѣлодвиженіе. Туристъ

travel in Switzerland, in France, in Italy, in Germany,  
 путешествуютъ по Швейцаріи, Франціи, Италіи, Германіи,

in America and in Egypt.

Америка а Египетъ.

native The brothers have bought houses, gardens, a village and  
 d. Братъ купили домъ, садъ, деревня и  
 active.

fields, and have sold oxen, cows, horses and a carriage.  
 поле, а продали быкъ, корова, лошадь, и карѣта.

To read a fable, draw a picture, write letters, play an air,  
Читать басня, рисовать картина, писать писмѣ, играть пѣсня,

mend pens. To visit the brothers and the sisters, the mothers  
чинить перѣ. Посвѣщать братья, и сестра, мать

and the daughters, the fathers and the sons. To buy a hat  
и дочь, отецъ и сынъ. Купить шляпа

and a cap, gloves and shoes, stockings and garters.  
и шапка, перчатка и башмакъ, чулокъ и подвязка.

The conqueror has vanquished the troops and has subjected  
Завоеватель побѣдилъ войско, и покорилъ

the people. Peter defeated the Swedes, conquered Esthonia  
народъ. Петръ разбилъ Шведъ, завоевалъ Эстляндія

and Livonia, founded the city of Saint-Petersburg, and civilised  
и Ливонія, основалъ городъ Санктпетербургъ, и просвѣтилъ

Russia. The Russians have conquered the Tartars, the Turks,  
Россія. Россіянинъ побѣждали Татаринъ, Турокъ,

the Swedes, the French and the Persian. The rains refresh  
Шведъ, Французъ и Персіянинъ. Дождь *т* освѣжаютъ

the earth, and the frosts destroy the grass-hoppers.

земля, и холодъ истребляютъ саранча (*sing.*).

Children, be attentive! John, come here! Soldiers, Vocative.

Дитя, будьте прилежны! Иванъ, прійди сюда! Воинъ,

fight valliantly! God, preserve the Emperor! Lord,

сражайтесь храбро! Богъ, спаси (*acc.*) Царь! Господь,

have mercy upon me!

помилуй меня!

The scholars write with a slate-pencil or [with a pen and Nominative  
Ученикъ пишутъ грифель *т* или перѣ и Instru-  
mental.

iak. John plays with Alexis and with Basil, and Mary

черниларъ. Иванъ играетъ съ Алексѣй и съ Василій, а Марья

plays with Sophia and with Amy. A tart with almonds;

играетъ съ Софья и съ Любовь. Пирогъ съ миндаль *т*;

pots • with flowers; a basin of water; a man of wit and горшóкъ съ цвѣтъ; кáдка съ водá; чéловѣкъ съ умъ и of genius; a gallery of pictures. Towns with a fortress and съ рѣнiй; галерéя съ картiна. Гóродъ съ кремль и a port; trees with leaves, flowers and fruits; shakos with гáвань f; дѣрево ъ лiсть, цвѣтъ и плодъ; кiверъ съ plumes; a room with doors; bread with salt; water with султáнъ; кóмната съ дверь f; хлѣбъ съ соль f; водá съ wine; wine with water; professors with pupils; a letter with винó; вино съ водá; профессóръ съ ученикъ; письмó съ money. To draw with a pencil, to paint with a brush and дѣньги f. Рисовáть карандашъ, писать кисть f и colours. The shop-keeper trades in tallow, in soap, in milk, крáска. Купѣць торгúеть салó, мыло, молоко, in flour, in groats, in wines, in beer, in cloth, in linen and мукá, крупá, винó, пиво, сукнó, полотнó и in laces, and the neighbours of the shop-keeper trade in oxen, кру́жево, а сосѣдъ купѣць торгúють волъ, in sheep and in horses. Palaces with towers; churches with барáнъ и лóшадъ f. Дворѣць съ бáшня; цѣрковь f съ steeples; houses with windows; buildings with galleries, колоко́льня; домъ съ окнó; здáние съ галерéя; regiments with colours. The mountains abound in gold, полкъ съ знáмя. Горá избiляютъ зóлото, in silver, in copper, in iron, in quick-silver and in lead. серебрó, мѣдь f, желiзо, ртуть f и свинець.

Nominative  
and Prepo-  
sitional.

The fables of the bull and the ram, of the ass and the Бáсня о быкъ и барáнъ, оъ осѣль и nightingale; of the cicada and the ant; of the oak and соловѣй; о кузнéчикъ и муравей; о дубъ и the reed; of the fox and the crow; of the wolf and the lamb. тростнiкъ; о лисица и ворóнъ; о волкъ и ягнѣнокъ.

The tales of the guardian-angel, of John and Mary; \* the  
Сказка объ ангелъ-хранитель, объ Ивѣнъ и Мѣрѣя;

histories of Sergius the hermit; of the hero and the genius.  
повѣсть о Сѣргіѣ пустынникѣ; о герой и гѣній.

To speak of games, of lessons, of the time, of the place, of  
Говорить объ игрѣ, объ урокъ, о время, о мѣсто, объ

circumstances. In the work there is said a great deal about  
обстоятельство. Въ сочинѣніе говорятъ много о

honour and infamy, about virtue and vice, about courage  
честь и безчестье, о добродѣтель и порокъ, о храбрость

and pusillanimity. In the water live the fishes, the frogs and  
и малодушіе. Въ водѣ живутъ рыба, лягушка и

the mollusca; and in the forests live the lions, the bears,  
слизень *m*; 'и въ лѣсъ оживутъ левъ, медвѣдь *m*,

the foxes and the hares.

лисица и заяць.

The books of the scholar please the master. The light The different cases.  
Книга ученикъ нравятся (*dat.*) учитель. Свѣтъ

of the sun illumines the earth with its rays. The colours of  
солнце озаряетъ землѣ лучъ. Цвѣтъ

the rose are agreeable to the eyes. The friends of humanity  
роза (*суть*) пріятны глазъ. Другъ челоѣчество

do good to men. In the garden flourish roses with  
дѣлаютъ добро люди. Въ (*prep.*) садѣ цвѣтутъ роза съ (*prep.*)

thorns; for there is no rose without thorns. The children  
шипъ; ибо нѣтъ (*gen.*) роза безъ (*instr.*) шипъ. Дѣтя

wash themselves with the water of the river. A glass of  
умываются водѣ рѣкѣ. Стаканъ съ (*instr.*)

water is on the table of the room. Tears of joy glisten  
водѣ стоитъ на (*prep.*) столѣ комната. Слеза радость блестятъ

in the eyes of the mother. The glory of the wicked is  
въ (*prep.*) глазъ мать. Слава злодѣй (*естъ*)

without stability; but the names of the beneficent shine  
непродолжительна; но имя благодѣтель сіяютъ

in eternity. Happiness on earth consists in  
въ (*prep.*) вѣчность. Счастье на (*prep.*) землѣ состоитъ въ (*prep.*)

tranquillity of mind and in purity of conscience. Young people  
спокойствіе душъ и въ чистотѣ совѣсть *f.* Юношѣ

love the song of the nightingale, on the bank of a river,  
любятъ пѣніе соловѣй, на (*prep.*) берегъ ручѣй,

by light of the moon. To tell the truth is the duty  
при (*prep.*) свѣтѣ лунѣ. Говорить правда есть долгъ

of children. To love God with heart and soul. The ants and  
дѣтя. Любить Богъ сердце и душѣ. Муравѣй и

the beavers may serve as a pattern to man. An excursion  
бобръ могутъ служить (*instr.*) примѣръ челоуѣкъ. Поѣздка

to Moscow and to Kiew. The entrance of the room  
въ (*acc.*) Москвѣ и въ Кіевѣ. Входъ въ (*acc.*) библіотека

of reading (reading-room), Give to the master the book  
для (*gen.*) чтеніе. Подай учитель тетрадь

of verses on the occasion of the feast. One must rise  
со (*instr.*) стихъ на (*acc.*) слѣчай праздникъ. Надобно вставать

in the morning, work in the day, rest in the evening, and  
(*instr.*) утро, работать день *m.*, отдыхать вечеръ, и

sleep at night. The roar of canons and the sound of bells  
опять ночь *f.* Громъ пушка и звонъ колоколъ

announced to the citizens the arrival of the conqueror  
возвѣстили гражданнѣ о (*prep.*) прибытіе побѣдитель

of the enemies of the country.

врагъ отечество.

## THE ADJECTIVE.

32. — The *adjectives* (прилагательныя имена) Division of the adjectives. in the Russian language are of three kinds: 1) The *qualifying* (качественныя) adjectives, as: чѣрный кафтанъ, *a black coat*; тихое дитя, *a quiet child*; весёлая жизнь, *a joyous life*. 2) The *possessive* (притяжательныя) adjectives, as: отцовъ сынъ, *the father's son*; лисья шкура, *a fox skin*; золотое кольцо, *a gold ring*; лѣтний садъ, *the summer garden*. 3) The *numeral* (числительныя) adjectives, as: два стола, *two tables*; второй мѣсяцъ, *the second month*.

To the adjectives belong also the *possessive*, *demonstrative*, *interrogative* and other pronouns, as also the *participles*, which are at times used as simple adjectives. The *Numeral* adjectives, which in Russian have their peculiar inflections, will be treated of in a separate article.

33. — The *qualifying* adjectives, or such as express the quality of an object, end in *ый* and *ий*, or, with the accent, in *оу* (neut. *ое* and *ее*, fem. *ая* and *яя*); e. g. добрый, *good*; лёгкий, *light*; синий, *blue*; сухой, *dry*; большой, *great*. Qualifying adjectives.

34. — The *possessive* adjectives, most of which are peculiar to the Russian language, are divided into *individual*, *common*, *material* and *circumstantial*. Possessive adjectives.

1. The *individual* or *special* (личныя, частныя), possessive adjectives, which mark the relation of an object to an individual, or in other words to an animate or personified being, end in *овъ*, *евъ*, *инъ* and *ынъ* (neut. *о*, fem. *а*), or in *ъ* (neut. *е*, fem. *я*), and are formed from the names of the objects in question by changing *ъ* and *о* into *овъ*

(or into *евъ* after the lingual or a hissing consonant); *и* and *ь* into *евъ*; *а*, *я* and *ъ* into *инъ*, and *ѹа* into *ѹинъ*, remembering however that in this formation the adjective follows the genitive inflection of the substantive; e. g. *сыновъ*, *the son's*; *Мáрковъ*, *Mark's*; *Лѣвѹвъ*, *Leon's*; *Христѹвъ*, *Christ's*; *стражевъ*, *the guardian's*; *отцѣвъ*, *the father's*; *Андрѣевъ*, *Andrew's*; *царѣвъ*, *the king's*; *Никитинъ*, *Nicetas's*; *дядинъ*, *the uncle's*; *свекрѹвинъ*, *mother-in-law's*; *мáтеринъ*, *the mother's*; *лѣвийцынъ*, *the girl's* (from *сынъ*, *Мáрко*, *Левъ*, *gen. Лѣва*, *Христѹсъ*, *gen. Христá*, *стражъ*, *отѣцъ*, *gen. отцá*, *Андрѣй*, *царь*, *Никита*, *дядя*, *свекрѹвъ*, *мать*, *gen. мáтери*, *дѣвѹѹа*). The termination *ь* is only found in the adjective *Госпѹдень*, *the Lord's* (from *Госпѹдь*), and in some few others in the ecclesiastical Slavonian.

To the above rule the following are exceptions: *Яковлевъ*, *James's*; *братнинъ*, *the brother's*; *мужнинъ*, *the husband's*; and also *Божій*, *God's*, formed from *Яковъ*, *братъ*, *мужъ* and *Богъ*. — We have still to remark that it is from these individual possessive adjectives that the patronymics, of which we have already spoken (§ 21), are formed; e. g. *Ивановичъ* and *Ивановна*, *John's son and daughter*; *Павловичъ* and *Павловна*, *Paul's son and daughter*; *Яковлевичъ* and *Яковлевна*, *James's son and daughter*; *Никитичъ* and *Никитична*, *Nicetas's son and daughter*.

2. The *common* or *generic* (ѹбщія, родовыя) possessive adjectives, which mark the relation of an object to all the individuals of the same species, have one principal termination, viz. *ѹй*, *овѹй* or *евѹй* (neut. *ѹе*, fem. *ѹя*), and some particular terminations; these are: *скѹй*, *нѹй*, *ѹный*, *овѹй*, *нѹй* (neut. *ѹе* and *ѹе*, fem. *ѹя* and *ѹя*), and are formed from the names of animate, inanimate and abstract objects: e. g. *рыбѹй*, *of a fish*; *медвѣжѹй*, *of a bear*; *птичѹй*, *of*

*a bird*; клопо́вий, *of a bug*; конё́вий, *of a horse*; ското́вскій, *of cattle*; гу́сий, *of a goose*; домо́вый, *domestic*; паро́вый, *of steam*; рѣ́чнóй, *fluvial*; ду́шевнóй, *of the soul*; жи́зненнóй, *vital*; сыно́внóй, *filial* (from рыба, медвѣдь, пти́ца, клопъ, конь, скотъ, гусь, домъ, паръ, рѣка, душа, жизнь, сынъ).

To the individual and common possessive adjectives belong also several Russian family names; e. g. Дми́триевъ, Пу́шкинъ, Завадо́вскій, as also several names of towns and villages; e. g. Ка́шинъ, Боро́динó, Смоле́нскъ, &c.

3. The *material* (вещёственныя) possessive adjectives, which indicate the material of which a thing is made, are formed from the names of material objects by means of the terminations *ый, ный, яный* (neut. *ое*, fem. *ая*), as: золо́то́й, *of gold*; желе́знýй, *of iron*; сере́бряннýй, *of silver*; дере́вннýй, *of wood* (from зо́лото, желе́зо, серебро, дере́во).

4. The *circumstantial* (обстоя́тельственныя) possessive adjectives are formed from nouns and adverbs signifying *time* and *place*, by means of the terminations *нй* (neut. *ее*, fem. *яя*), and in the names of months, by the termination *скй* (neut. *ое*, fem. *ая*); as: лѣ́тнй, *of summer*; ны́нѣшнй, *actual*; э́тй, *of this place*; ма́ртовскй, *of March*; ию́льскй, *of July* (from лѣ́то, ны́нѣ, тамъ, ма́ртъ,

35. — The properties of the adjectives in Russian are: the *gender* (ро́дъ), the *number* (число́), the *case* (паде́жъ), the *scope of the termination* (у́сѣченіе оконча́нія), and the *degrees of signification* or *degrees of the qualities* (сте́пени ка́чествъ), and

Properties of  
adjectives.



these properties are all marked by particular inflections.

Gender, number, case. 36. — As the adjective must agree in gender, number and case with the substantive which it qualifies, it has three terminations to indicate the difference of *gender*, two for the different *numbers* and seven for the *cases*.

Апоскоп of the termination. 37. — As the adjectives are used for two different purposes, firstly simply to qualify the noun to which they belong, as: *добрый человекъ, a good man; новая шляпа, a new hat*; and secondly to form the attribute of the proposition, as: *человекъ (есть) добрѣ, the man is good; шляпа была нова, the hat was new*; they have in Russian two different terminations, the one *full* (полное), the other *apocopated* (устьченное). These two terminations are as follows:

## SINGULAR.

	Masculine.	Neuter.	Feminine.
Full term:	ый (ой), ий;	ое, ее;	ая, яя;
Апос. term:	ъ, ъ;	о, е;	а, я;
Examples:	{ нѳвый, синій; нѳвое, синее; нѳвая, синяя; нѳвъ, синѣ; нѳво, синѣ; нѳва, синя;		

## PLURAL.

	Masculine.	Neut. and Fem.
Full term:	ые, ie;	ья, ія.
Апос. term:	ы, и;	ы, и.
Examples:	{ нѳвые, синіе; нѳвыя, синія. нѳвы, сині; нѳвы, сині.	

These two examples *нѳвый, new*, and *синій, blue*, show that the apocopated is formed from the full termination, by changing *ий* and *ій*, (or *ой* with the accent) into *ѣ* and *ѣ*, according to

the nature of the preceding consonant, for the masculine† and by cutting of the final vowel in the other inflections. In this formation, the vowel *e* or *o* is inserted between two consonants in the masculine, in order to facilitate the pronunciation, and the semi-vowels *ь* and *й* are changed into *e*, observing that the tonic accent, which remains on the same syllable in the inflections of the full termination, is often transposed in the apocopated termination, sometimes to the inserted vowel of the masculine, sometimes to the first syllable, at other times to the inflection of the feminine, and occasionally to that of the neuter and the plural; e. g.

бѣлый, white, <i>apoc. term.</i> бѣлѣ, лѣ, лѣ.	вѣрный, true, <i>apoc.</i> вѣренѣ, рно, рна.
здоровый, wholesome, здоровѣ, ово, ова.	тяжкій, heavy, тяжкѣ, жко, жкѣ.
дорогой, dear, дорогѣ, ого, огѣ.	истинный, veritable, истиненѣ, инно, инна.
великій, great, великѣ, ѣко, ѣкѣ.	древній, ancient, древенѣ, вне, вна.
любі́й, stout, лю́жѣ, жѣ, жѣ.	полный, full, полноѣ, лно, лнѣ.
хороші́й, good, хоро́шѣ, ошѣ, ошѣ.	зло́й, evil, зомѣ, зѣ, зѣ.
живо́й, live, живѣ, ѣво, ѣвѣ.	крѣпкій, strong, крѣпокѣ, пко, пкѣ.
сухой, dry, сухѣ, сѣхо, сѣхѣ.	лёгкій, light, легѣ, гѣ, гѣ.
высо́кій, high, высо́кѣ, окѣ, окѣ.	горькій, bitter, горѣкѣ, рѣко, рѣкѣ.
быстры́й, rapid, быстрѣ, тро, трѣ.	сильный, vigorous, силѣнѣ, льно, льнѣ.
firm, твёрдый, ёрдо, рдѣ.	спокойный, quiet, спокоенѣ, ойно, ойна.

The following are exceptions to this rule: досто́йный, *worthy*; блаже́нный, *happy*; надме́нный, *proud*, and соверше́нный, *perfect*, which form: досто́инѣ, ойно, ойна; блаже́нѣ, надме́нѣ, соверше́нѣ, ённа.

The qualifying adjectives have both terminations, except радѣ, *joyous*, and гораз́дѣ, *except*, which have only the apocopated, while большо́й, *great*, and мены́шой, *little*, have only the full termination. The individual possessive adjectives have only the apocopated termination, while the material and circumstantial possessive adjectives have only the full termination. The same is the case with several common possessive adjectives, with the exception of such as end in *ій*, which in the singular have the full, and in the plural the apocopated termination.

38. — The qualifying adjectives have five degrees <sup>Degrees of signification.</sup> of signification, viz. the *positive*, the *comparative*, the *superlative*, the *diminutive* and the *augmentative*.

1.<sup>d</sup> The *positive* (положительная стéпень) is indicated by the ordinary terminations, full and apocopated; e. g. бѣлый and бѣль, *white*; сухой and сухъ, *dry*; синій and синь, *blue*.

2. The *comparative* (сравнительная стéпень) is marked in the full termination by the inflections *нѣшій, аишій, шій* (neut. *ее*, fem. *ая*), and in the apocopated termination by the invariable inflections *нѣ* and *е*, and is formed in three different ways:

1) By changing the termination of the positive, preceded by any consonant except a guttural, into *нѣшій* for the full, and into *нѣ* for the apocopated termination; e. g.

бѣлый, white, *comp.* бѣлѣшій and бѣлѣ, whiter.  
 слабый, weak, . . . . . слабѣшій and слабѣ, weaker  
 живой, live, . . . . . живѣшій and живѣ, more live.  
 полный, full, . . . . . полнѣшій and полнѣ, more full.

From this rule are excepted the following adjectives, which though they have the full termination *нѣшій*, have the apocopated in *е*, changing at the same time the mutable consonant.

богатый, rich, *comp. full term.* богатѣшій, *apoc. term.* богаче.  
 дешёвый, cheap, . . . . . дешёвѣшій, . . . . . дешёвѣ.  
 густой, thick, . . . . . густѣшій, . . . . . гуще  
 красивый, handsome, . . . . . краснѣшій, . . . . . краше.  
 (No красный, *red*, forms regularly краснѣ)  
 крутой, steep, . . . . . крутѣшій, . . . . . круче  
 поздний, tardy, . . . . . позднѣшій, . . . . . позже.  
 простой, simple, . . . . . простѣшій, . . . . . проще (and простѣ.)  
 твёрдый, firm, . . . . . твердѣшій, . . . . . твёрже.  
 толстый, thick, . . . . . толстѣшій, . . . . . толще.  
 частый, frequent, . . . . . частѣшій, . . . . . чаще.  
 чистый, pure, . . . . . чистѣшій, . . . . . чище.

The adjectives горячій, *burning*; лысый, *bald*; сизый, *dove-coloured*; свѣжій, *fresh*; and others in *эый, сый, жый, ч* have only the apocopated termination *нѣ*: горячѣ, свѣжѣ, &c.

2) By changing the termination of the positive, preceded by one of the gutturals (г, к, х), into *аѣиѣ* for the full, and into *е* for the apocopated termination, permuting the consonant at the same time; e. g.

строгѣиѣ, strict, *compar.* строгѣѣиѣ and строгѣе, stricter.  
 крѣпкѣиѣ, strong, . . . крѣпчѣѣиѣ and крѣпче, stronger.  
 вѣтхѣиѣ, old, . . . вѣтшѣѣиѣ and вѣтше, older.

Exceptions. — Most of the adjectives in *ѣиѣ*, *кѣиѣ*, *хѣиѣ*, have not the full termination of the comparative; and also the following adjectives form their comparatives in different ways:

долгѣиѣ, long, *compar. full term.* должѣѣиѣ, *apoc. term.* долѣше.  
 дорогѣиѣ, dear, . . . . . дражѣѣиѣ, . . . . . дороже.  
 далѣкѣиѣ and дальнѣиѣ, far, . . . дальнѣѣиѣ, . . . . . далѣше.  
 близкѣиѣ, near, . . . . . ближѣѣиѣ, . . . . . ближе.  
 глубокѣиѣ, deep, . . . . . глубочѣѣиѣ, . . . . . глубже.  
 горькѣиѣ, bitter, . . . . . горчѣѣиѣ, . . . . . горче.

(No горькѣиѣ, *bad*, takes the Slav. inflection горшѣиѣ and горше.)

короткѣиѣ and краткѣиѣ, short, . . . . .	кратчѣѣиѣ, . . . . .	короче.
рѣдкѣиѣ, rare, . . . . .	рѣдчѣѣиѣ, . . . . .	рѣже.
сладкѣиѣ, sweet, . . . . .	сладчѣѣиѣ, . . . . .	слаще.
тонкѣиѣ, thin, . . . . .	тончѣѣиѣ, . . . . .	тоньше.
тяжкѣиѣ, heavy, . . . . .	тягчѣѣиѣ, . . . . .	тягче.
широкѣиѣ, broad, . . . . .	широчѣѣиѣ, . . . . .	шире.
гадкѣиѣ, dirty, . . . . .	These five { have not the full term. of the com- parative.	гаже.
гладкѣиѣ, smooth, . . . . .		гладже.
жѣдкѣиѣ, liquid, . . . . .		жѣже.
узкѣиѣ, narrow, . . . . .		уже.
слабкѣиѣ, slack, . . . . .		слабже.

3) The inflection *ѣиѣ* for the comparative is only found in the following adjectives, three of which take their comparative from another root:

высѣкѣиѣ, high; *compar. full term.* высѣиѣ, *apoc. term.* выше.  
 молодѣиѣ, young; . . . . . младѣиѣ, . . . . . моложе.  
 низкѣиѣ, low; . . . . . низѣиѣ, . . . . . ниже.  
 старѣиѣ, old; . . . . . старѣиѣ and старѣѣиѣ, старше and старѣе.  
 худѣиѣ, bad; . . . . . худѣиѣ, . . . . . хуже.  
 великѣиѣ (and большѣиѣ), great; большѣиѣ, . . . . . больше.  
 малѣиѣ (and меньшѣиѣ), little; меньшѣиѣ, . . . . . меньше.  
 хорошѣиѣ, good; . . . . . лучшѣиѣ, . . . . . лучше.

1. Care must be taken not to confound the comparative of the adjectives *дольше*, *longer*; *то́ньше*, *finer*; *да́льше*, *more distant*; *больше*, *greater*; *меньше*, *less*, with that of the adverbs *дольше*, *longer*; *то́ньше*, *finer*; *да́льше*, *further*; *больше*, *more*; *меньше*, *less*. But this difference exists only in the above five words, the comparative of the adverbs being in every other instance similar to that of the adjectives in the apocopated termination.

2. The apocopated termination of the comparative sometimes takes the preposition *по*, which softens and diminishes the force; e. g. *побѣ́льшѣ*, *a little whiter*; *потонѣ́шьѣ*, *a little finer*; *получше́*, *a little better*.

3. Such adjectives as want one of the terminations of the comparative, supply its place with the adverb *больше* before the positive; e. g. *больше́ узкій*, *narrower*; *больше́ жидкій*, *more liquid*; *больше́ радъ*, *more joyous*; *больше́ гораздъ*, *more expert*.

3. The *superlative* (*превосходная стѣпень*) in Russian is not marked by any particular inflection, except in the four following adjectives:

*великій*, great, *compar.* *большій*; *superl.* *величайшій*, greatest.

*высокій*, high, . . . . *высшій*; . . . . *высочайшій*, highest.

*малый*, little, . . . . *меньшій*; . . . . *малѣйшій*, least.

*низкій*, low, . . . . *низшій*; . . . . *нижайшій*, lowest.

In all the other adjectives, in the full termination, the superlative is expressed by that of the comparative, the words *изъ всѣхъ*, *of all*, being understood, or the particle *най* being placed before it, or also by that of the positive, placing before it the words *самый* (*n.* *самое*, *f.* *самая*), as: *легчайшій* (*изъ всѣхъ*), *наилегчайшій* or *самый лёгкій*, *the lightest*; *лучшій* (*изъ всѣхъ*), *наилучшій*, or *самый лучшій* (improperly, for *самый хорошій*), *the best*. In the apocopated termination the superlative is the same as the comparative, adding the word *всѣхъ* or *всего́*, e. g. *всѣхъ́ легче*, *the lightest*; *всѣхъ́́ лучше*, *the best*; *всего́́ важнѣе*, *the most important*; *всего́́́ труднѣе*, *the most difficult*.

4. The *diminutive* degree (уменьшительная стéпень) is used to mark the diminution of quality, indicating either a want or smallness of any quality in an object, or a softening of the force of the quality, and also for the agreement of the adjective with the diminutive noun; e. g. *бѣловáтыйя черни́ла*, *whitish ink*; *ры́жесенькая лошáдка*, *a little bay horse*; *мáленькая дѣвочка*, *a little young girl*. The diminutive adjective in the former case ends, in the full termination, in *овáтый* or *евáтый* (neut. *ое*, fem. *ая*), and in the apocopated in *овáтѣ* or *евáтѣ* (neut. *о*, fem. *а*), and in the latter case, in the full termination, it ends in *онькíй* and *енькíй* (neut. *ое*, fem. *ая*), and in the apocopated, in *онекъ* and *енекъ* (neut. *нѣко*, fem. *нѣка*); e. g.

*бѣлый*, white; *dim.* *бѣловáтый* or *бѣловáтъ*, and *бѣленькíй* or *бѣленекъ*.  
*тѣплый*, hot; . . . *тепловáтый* or *тепловáтъ*, and *тепленькíй* or *тепленекъ*.  
*сухой*, dry; . . . *суховáтый* or *суховáтъ*, and *сѹхонькíй* or *сѹхонекъ*.  
*красный*, red; . . . *красновáтый* or *-новáтъ*, and *красненькíй* or *-нѣнокъ*.  
*синий*, blue; . . . *синевáтый* or *синевáтъ*, and *синенькíй* or *синѣнекъ*.  
*рыжій*, bay; . . . *рыжевáтый* or *рыжевáтъ*, and *рыженькíй* or *рыженекъ*.

The diminutive ending *овáтый*, *евáтый*, must not be confounded with the similar ending of the positive, which belongs to the qualifying adjectives; e. g. *виновáтый*, *culpable*; *угловáтый*, *angular*; *ноздревáтый*, *porous*; *угревáтый*, *scaly*.

5. The *augmentative* degree (увеличительная стéпень) is used in the qualifying adjectives to express the abundance or excess of quality, and is formed in the full termination by the prepositive particle *пре*, and in the apocopated by the endings *ѣхонекъ* and *ѣшенекъ*, or *ѡхонекъ* and *ѡшенекъ* (neut. *нѣко*, fem. *нѣка*); e. g.

*бѣлый*, white; *augm.* *пребѣлый*, or *бѣлѣхонекъ* and *бѣлѣшенекъ*, quite white.  
*сухой*, dry; . . . *пресухой*, or *сухѡхонекъ* and *сухѡшенекъ*, very dry.  
*лѣгkий*, light; . . . *прелѣгkий*, or *лѣгѡхонекъ* and *лѣгѡшенекъ*, very light.  
*мáлый*, little; . . . *премáлый*, or *мáлѣхонекъ* and *мáлѣшенекъ*, very little.

## DECLENSIONS OF ADJECTIVES.

FIRST FULL TERMINATION.		SECOND APOCOPATED TERMINATION.		THIRD MIXED TERMINATION.	
CASSES . . . . .		CASSES . . . . .		CASSES . . . . .	
NUMBERS . . . . .		NUMBERS . . . . .		NUMBERS . . . . .	
SINGULAR.		SINGULAR.		SINGULAR.	
PLURAL.		PLURAL.		PLURAL.	
<i>Masc gender.</i> <i>Neut gender.</i> <i>Fem. gender.</i>		<i>Masc gender.</i> <i>Neut gender.</i> <i>Fem. gender.</i>		<i>Masc g.</i> <i>Neut g.</i> <i>Fem. g.</i>	
<i>N.</i> <i>he</i> <i>le</i> <i>G.</i> <i>hly</i> <i>hly</i> <i>D.</i> <i>hly</i> <i>hly</i> <i>I.</i> <i>hly</i> <i>hly</i> <i>P.</i> <i>hly</i> <i>hly</i>		<i>N.</i> <i>he</i> <i>ce</i> <i>G.</i> <i>hly</i> <i>hly</i> <i>D.</i> <i>hly</i> <i>hly</i> <i>I.</i> <i>hly</i> <i>hly</i> <i>P.</i> <i>hly</i> <i>hly</i>		<i>N.</i> <i>he</i> <i>ce</i> <i>G.</i> <i>hly</i> <i>hly</i> <i>D.</i> <i>hly</i> <i>hly</i> <i>I.</i> <i>hly</i> <i>hly</i> <i>P.</i> <i>hly</i> <i>hly</i>	
<i>like the Nominative or the Genitive . .</i>		<i>like the Nominative or the Genitive . .</i>		<i>like the Nominative or the Genitive . .</i>	
<i>For the three genders.</i>		<i>For the three genders.</i>		<i>For the three genders.</i>	
<i>like the Nominative or the Genitive . .</i>		<i>like the Nominative or the Genitive . .</i>		<i>like the Nominative or the Genitive . .</i>	

The adjective *прекрасный*, *beautiful*, in which the particle *пре* has an augmentative meaning, is used as a simple adjective to be distinguished from *красный*, *red*; but it is not the same case with *прелестный*, *charming*, derived from *прелесть*, *charm*.

39. — The Russian adjectives have three *declensions*; the *first* for adjectives of the *full termination*, the *second* for those of the *apocopated*, and the *third* for those of the *mixed termination*, i. e. for such common possessive adjectives in *и* (neut. *бе*, fem. *бя*), as have some inflections of the full and others of the apocopated termination. Each of these declensions has three endings for three genders, masculine, feminine and neuter, corresponding to the three declensions of substantives, as is seen in the opposite table.

Declension  
of adjectives.

In declining adjectives according to this table, attention is required to the following observations:

1. The inflection *ой* of the *nominative* singular masculine, instead of *ый*, or of *ий* preceded by a guttural or a hissing consonant, is only used when the accent is on the last syllable; e. g. *слѣпой*, *blind*; *восковой*, *of wax*; *глухой*, *deaf*; *чужой*, *foreign*; *большой*, *great* (instead of *слѣпый*, *восковый*, *глухий*, *чужий*, *большій*).

2. The inflection *я* or *ія* of the *genitive* singular feminine is Slavonian, and is only used in poetry, or in religious prose; e. g. *крѣтость святѣя жизни*, *the sweetness of a holy life*; *Собѣръ Казанскѣя Бѣжѣя Матѣри*, *the Cathedral of Our-Lady of Casan*.

3. The inflection *ой*, *ей* or *ей* of the *instrumental* singular feminine is a contraction of *ою*, *ею* or *бѣю* in use in familiar language.

4. The inflection *ю*, of the *prepositional* singular masculine and neuter of the II declension, is confined to the names of families and towns, and the inflection *омѣ* to the individual possessive adjectives, and to the qualifying adjectives in the apocopated termination. (See Paradigms 9, 10, 11, 12, 13.)



## PARADIGMS OF THE THREE

		SINGULAR					
DECLENSIONS:	TERMINATIONS:	Masculine and neuter genders.					
		Nomin. and Vocative.		Genitive.	Dative.	Accus.	Instr. Prep.
FIRST.	FULL.	1. { <i>т.</i> нѡвый, new . . . . .	нѡв-аго . . . . .		ому . . . . .	ымъ . . . . .	омъ . . . . .
		н. нѡвое . . . . .					
		2. { <i>т.</i> мѡгкій, tender . . . . .	мѡгк-аго . . . . .		ому . . . . .	ымъ . . . . .	омъ . . . . .
		н. мѡгкое . . . . .					
		3. { <i>т.</i> сѡнїй, blue . . . . .	сѡн-аго . . . . .		ему . . . . .	ымъ . . . . .	емъ . . . . .
		н. сѡнее . . . . .					
		4. { <i>т.</i> свѣжїй, fresh . . . . .	свѣж-аго . . . . .		ему . . . . .	ымъ . . . . .	емъ . . . . .
		н. свѣжее . . . . .					
SECOND.	APOCOPATED.	5. ( <i>Графъ</i> ) Толстѡй . . . . .	Толст-аго . . . . .		ому . . . . .	ымъ . . . . .	омъ . . . . .
		т. портной, a tailor . . . . .	портн-аго . . . . .		ому . . . . .	ымъ . . . . .	омъ . . . . .
		н. жаркое, a roast . . . . .	жарк-аго . . . . .		ому . . . . .	ымъ . . . . .	омъ . . . . .
		8. . . . .					
		9. { <i>т.</i> царѣвъ, the king's . . . . .	царѣв-а . . . . .		у . . . . .	ымъ . . . . .	омъ . . . . .
		н. царѣво . . . . .					
		10. { <i>т.</i> бѣлы, white . . . . .	бѣл-а . . . . .		у . . . . .	ымъ . . . . .	омъ . . . . .
		н. бѣло . . . . .					
THIRD.	MIXED.	11. ( <i>Князь</i> ) Рѣшнѣ . . . . .	Рѣшнѣ-а . . . . .		у . . . . .	ымъ . . . . .	омъ . . . . .
		12. ( <i>городъ</i> ) Кашинѣ . . . . .	Кашинѣ-а . . . . .		у . . . . .	ымъ . . . . .	омъ . . . . .
		13. ( <i>село</i> ) Бородинѣ . . . . .	Бородинѣ-а . . . . .		у . . . . .	ымъ . . . . .	омъ . . . . .
		14. . . . .					
		15. { <i>т.</i> Господень, the Lord's . . . . .	Господѣ-я . . . . .		ю . . . . .	ымъ . . . . .	омъ . . . . .
		н. Господне . . . . .					
		16. { <i>т.</i> синѣ, blue . . . . .	синѣ-а . . . . .		ю . . . . .	ымъ . . . . .	омъ . . . . .
		н. синѣ . . . . .					
THIRD.	MIXED.	17. { <i>т.</i> рыбїй, of fish . . . . .	рыб-ьяго . . . . .		ему . . . . .	ымъ . . . . .	омъ . . . . .
		н. рыбье . . . . .					

The following observations, relative to the *tonic accent* in the declension of the adjectives, are important:

1. All the inflections of the full and of the mixed termination, i. e. in the 1st and 3rd declension, retain the accentuation of the nominative singular masculine.

2. In the apocopated termination, i. e. in the 2nd declension, the accent is often transferred to the last syllable, sometimes only in the nominative feminine, and at other times in the neuter and in the plural. The oblique cases of the apocopated termination either retain the accentuation of the nominative, or transfer the accent to the last syllable.

## DECLENSIONS OF ADJECTIVES.

SINGULAR.					PLURAL.				
Feminine gender.					For the three genders.				
N. and V.	G. D. and P.	Acc.	Instr.		Nom. and Voc.	Gen. and Pr.	Dat.	Accus.	Instr.
нов-ая . . . .	ой . . . .	ую . . . .	ою . . . .		м. нов-ые . . . .	ихъ . . . .	ымъ . . . .		ими
мѣтк-ая . . . .	ой . . . .	ую . . . .	ою . . . .		н. ф. нов-ья . . . .				
сѣн-я . . . .	ей . . . .	юю . . . .	ею . . . .		м. мѣтк-іе . . . .	ихъ . . . .	имъ . . . .		ими
свѣж-ая . . . .	ей . . . .	ую . . . .	ею . . . .		н. ф. мѣтк-ія . . . .				
(Графиня)					м. сѣн-іе . . . .	ихъ . . . .	имъ . . . .		ими
Толст-ая . . . .	ой . . . .	ую . . . .	ою . . . .		н. ф. сѣн-ія . . . .				
					м. свѣж-іе . . . .	ихъ . . . .	имъ . . . .		ими
					н. ф. свѣж-ія . . . .				
кладов-ая . . . .	ой . . . .	ую . . . .	ою . . . .		(Графъ) Толст-ые . . . .	ихъ . . . .	ымъ . . . .		ими
a storehouse.					портн-ые . . . .	ихъ . . . .	ымъ . . . .		ими
					жарк-ія . . . .	ихъ . . . .	имъ . . . .		ими
					кладов-ыя . . . .	ихъ . . . .	ымъ . . . .		ими
царѣв-а . . . .	ой . . . .	у . . . .	ою . . . .		царѣв-ы . . . .	ихъ . . . .	ымъ . . . .		ими
бѣл-а . . . .	ой . . . .	у . . . .	ою . . . .		бѣл-ы . . . .	ихъ . . . .	ымъ . . . .		ими
(Князья)					Решив-а . . . .	ой . . . .	у . . . .	ою . . . .	
Решив-а . . . .	ой . . . .	у . . . .	ою . . . .		(Князь) Решив-ы . . . .	ихъ . . . .	ымъ . . . .		ими
(дерева)									
Мури-а . . . .	ой . . . .	у . . . .	ою . . . .						
Господн-я . . . .	ей . . . .	ю . . . .	ою . . . .		Господн-и . . . .	ихъ . . . .	имъ . . . .		ими
син-я . . . .	ей . . . .	ю . . . .	ою . . . .		син-и . . . .	ихъ . . . .	имъ . . . .		ими
рыб-ья . . . .	ей . . . .	ю . . . .	ою . . . .		рыб-ья . . . .	ихъ . . . .	ымъ . . . .		ими

The *accusative masculine*, singular and plural, of the adjectives is like the *nominative*, when the noun, which they qualify, designates an inanimate or abstract object, as is also the case with the substantives; and it is like the *genitive*, when the noun designates an animate being, even when the accusative of the noun in question may not happen to be the same as the genitive, as is the case with the masculine substantives of the 3rd declension; ex. мы любимъ вѣрнаго слугу, we love the faithful servant; мы любимъ вѣрныхъ слугъ, we love the faithful servants.

5. The apocopated termination of the adjectives is often used instead of the full in poetry, for the sake of the rhythm; e. g. *пушисты* ивы (instead of *пушистые*), *thick hoarfrost*; *быстры* воды (instead of *быстрые*), *rapid waters*; *добрѹ* молодѹ (instead of *доброму*), *to the good young man*; *сырѹ* землю (instead of *сырую*), *the moist earth*.

6. The inflection *ie, ia, ia20*, &c. of the common possessive adjectives is used in an elevated style, and *be, ba, ba20*, &c. in familiar language.

7. As the *vocative* of the adjectives is always the same as the nominative, it has been omitted in the table of the declensions.

Paradigms  
of the de-  
clensions of  
adjectives.

40. — With due attention to the above remarks all the adjectives of the Russian language can be declined according to the 17 paradigms. (See p. 76 sq.)

First  
declension.

According to the 1st paradigm (*новый*) are declined: 1) the qualifying adjectives in *ый*; 2) the common possessive adjectives in *овый, евый, ный, иный*; 3) all the material possessive adjectives; 4) the diminutive adjectives in *оватый* and *еватый*; remarking that the termination *ый* when accented is changed into *ой*. Such are:

- |   |   |
|---|---|
| 1) <i>Добрый</i> , good, <i>н. доброе, ф. добрая.</i>         | <i>Дорожный</i> , of road, <i>дорожное, дорожная.</i>   |
| <i>Сильный</i> , vigorous, <i>сильное, сильная</i>            | <i>Носовой</i> , of the nose, <i>носовое, носовая</i>   |
| <i>Старый</i> , old, <i>старое, старая</i>                    | 3) <i>Золотой</i> , of gold, <i>золотое, золотая.</i>   |
| <i>Черный</i> , black, <i>чёрное, чёрная.</i>                 | <i>Железный</i> , of iron, <i>железное, железная.</i>   |
| <i>Красный</i> , red, <i>красное, красная.</i>                | <i>Масляный</i> , of oil, <i>масляное, масляная.</i>    |
| <i>Белый</i> , white, <i>белое, белая</i>                     | <i>Кожаный</i> , of leather, <i>кожаное, кожаная.</i>   |
| <i>Умный</i> , wise, <i>умное, умная.</i>                     | <i>Деревянный</i> , of wood, <i>деревянное, -ая.</i>    |
| 2) <i>Грубый</i> , coarse, <i>грубое, грубая.</i>             | 4) <i>Беловатый</i> , whitish, <i>беловатое, -ая.</i>   |
| <i>Полный</i> , full, <i>полное, полная.</i>                  | <i>Красноватый</i> , reddish, <i>красноватое, -ая.</i>  |
| <i>Нежный</i> , tender, <i>нежное, нежная.</i>                | <i>Синеватый</i> , bluish, <i>синеватое, синеватая.</i> |
| <i>Слепой</i> , blind, <i>слепое, слепая.</i>                 | <i>Рыжеватый</i> , ruddy, <i>рыжеватое, -ая.</i>        |
| <i>Простой</i> , simple, <i>простое, простая.</i>             |   |
| <i>Худой</i> , bad, <i>худое, худая.</i>                      |   |
| <i>Нямой</i> , dumb, <i>нямое, нямая.</i>                     |   |
| 3) <i>Бобровый</i> , of beaver, <i>н. бобровое, ф. -овая.</i> |   |
| <i>Ежовый</i> , of hedgehog, <i>ежовое, ежовая.</i>           |   |
| <i>Пчелиный</i> , of bee, <i>пчелиное, пчелиная.</i>          |   |

According to the 2nd paradigm (мягкій) are declined: 1) the qualifying adjectives in *гій, кій, хій*; 2) the common possessive adjectives in *скій* and *цкій*; 3) the diminutive adjectives in *енькій* and *онькій*; the termination *ій* when accented being also changed into *ой*. Such are: \*

- |  |  |
|--|--|
| 1) Лёгкій, light, <i>м. лёгкое, ф. лёгкая.</i> | Господскій, seigniorial, <i>м. господское, ф. господская</i> |
| Строгій, strict, строгое, строгая.             | Русскій, Russian, русское, русская.                          |
| Кроткій, kind, кроткое, кроткая.               | Нѣмецкій, German, нѣмецкое, нѣмецкая                         |
| Великій, great, великое, великая.              | Людскій, men's, людское, людская.                            |
| Упругій, elastic, упругое, упругая             | Городскій, of a town, городское, городская.                  |
| Горькій, bitter, горькое, горькая              |  |
| Вѣтхій, old, вѣтхое, вѣтхая.                   | 3) Маленькій, little, маленькое, -кая                        |
| Дорогой, dear, дорогое, дорогая.               | Бѣленькій, whitish, бѣленькое, бѣленькая                     |
| Сухой, dry, сухое, сухая                       | Лѣгонькій, lightish, лѣгонькое, -кая                         |
| Глухой, deaf, глухое, глухая.                  |  |
| 2) Звѣрскій, bestial, звѣрское, -ская          |  |
| Жѣнскій, feminine, женское, женская            |  |

According to the 3rd paradigm (твёрдый) are declined the adjectives: 1) qualifying, 2) circumstantial possessive, and 3) some common possessive, in *ній* (neut. *ее*, fem. *яя*); such are:

- |   |  |
|---|--|
| 1) Древній, ancient, <i>м. древнее, ф. древняя.</i> | Здѣшній, of here, <i>м. здѣшнее, ф. здѣшняя.</i> |
| Ближній, neighbour, ближнее, [ближняя.              | Нынѣшній, actual, нынѣшнее, -нѣшняя              |
| Дальній, distant, дальнее, дальняя                  | Зимній, hybernal, зимнее, зимняя.                |
| Искренній, sincere, искреннее, искренняя            | Весенній, vernal, весеннее, -няя.                |
| Игрёній, light-sorrel, игрёнее, игрёная.            | Лѣтній, estival, лѣтнее, лѣтняя                  |
| Порожній, empty, порожнее, порожняя                 | Осенній, autumnal, осеннее, осенняя              |
| Поздній, tardy, позднее, поздняя.                   | Прѣжній, precedent, прѣжнее, -жняя.              |
| Ранній, early, раннее, ранняя                       | Послѣдній, last, послѣднее, -дняя.               |
| 2) Вчерашній, yesterday's, вчерашнее, -шняя.        | 3) Мужній, marital, мужнее, мужняя.              |
| Вечерній, evening's, вечернее, вечерняя.            | Дружній, friend's, дружнее, дружняя              |
| Утренній, morning's, утреннее, утренняя.            | Сыновній, filial, сыновнее, сыновняя.            |

According to the 4th paradigm (свѣжій) are declined: 1) the qualifying adjectives in *юій, чій, шій* and *щій* (neut. *ее*, fem. *ая*); 2) all the comparatives and superlatives in the full termination; observing that the ending *ій* when accented is changed into *ой*. Such are:

1) <b>Дѣлѣй</b> , robust, <i>я. дѣлѣе, / дѣлая</i>	<b>Чужой</b> , foreign, <i>я. чужое, / чужая</i>
<b>Горѣй</b> , hot, <i>горѣе, горѣчая</i>	<b>Общій</b> , common, <i>общее, общая</i>
<b>Кипѣй</b> , boiling, <i>кипѣе, -чая</i>	<b>Нѣщій</b> , poor, <i>нѣще, нѣщя</i>
<b>Хорощій</b> , good, <i>хороще, хорощая</i>	2) <b>Большій</b> , greater, <i>большее, большая</i>
<b>Большой</b> , great, <i>большое, больша</i>	<b>Лучшій</b> , better, <i>лучшее, лучшая</i>
<b>Похожій</b> , resembling, <i>похожее, -жая</i>	<b>Меньшій</b> , least, <i>меньшее, меньшая</i>
<b>Пригожій</b> , pretty, <i>пригожее, пригожая</i>	<b>Нѣжнѣшій</b> , more tender, <i>-ѣщее, -шая</i>

According to the 5th paradigm (Толстой) are declined family names in *ый* and *ий*, or in *ой* with the accent (fem. *ая*); the vowel *ы* being changed into *и* after a guttural. Such are:

<b>Смирной</b> , Smirnoi, <i>/ Смирная</i>	<b>Трубецкой</b> , Troobetzkoj, <i>/ Трубецкая</i>
<b>Полевой</b> , Polivoj, <i>Полевая</i>	<b>Заводовскій</b> , Zavadovski, <i>Заводовская</i>
<b>Нарѣжный</b> , Naraizhny, <i>Нарѣжная</i>	<b>Жуковскій</b> , Zhookovski, <i>Жуковская</i>
<b>Браницкій</b> , Bramitzki, <i>Браницкая</i>	<b>Мещерскій</b> , Mestcherski, <i>Мещерская</i>
<b>Вобринскій</b> , Bobrinski, <i>Вобринская</i>	
<b>Долгору́кй</b> , Dolgorooki, <i>Долгору́кая</i>	

Such family names as are formed from the genitive, as: Мертваго, *Mertvaho*; Паренаго, *Parenaho*; Сухихъ, *Sookhiikh*, Нагихъ, *Naghiikh*, are indeclinable.

According to the 6th, 7th and 8th paradigm (портной, жаркое, кладовая) are declined some masculine neuter and feminine nouns, which are in fact only adjectives used as substantives, remembering to change *о* into *е* and *ы* into *и* after a guttural or a hissing consonant. Such are:

1) <b>Выборный</b> , a deputy.	2) <b>Животное</b> , an animal.
<b>Востовой</b> , a messenger.	<b>Мороженое</b> , ice-creams.
<b>Кормчій</b> , the pilot	<b>Насѣкомое</b> , an insect.
<b>Часовой</b> , a sentry.	3) <b>Вселенная</b> , the universe.
<b>Мастеровой</b> , an artisan	<b>Гостѣная</b> , a drawing-room.
<b>Подъѣмчій</b> , a clerk.	<b>Набережная</b> , a quay.
<b>Прохожій</b> , a passenger.	<b>Чертежная</b> , room for the drawers.
<b>Пѣвчій</b> , a chanter.	<b>Перѣдняя</b> , an antechamber.

Second declension.

According to the 9th paradigm (царевъ) are declined the individual possessive adjectives in *овъ, евъ, инъ, ынъ* (neut. *о, fem. а*). Such are:

<b>Сынѣвъ</b> , son's, <i>я. сынѣво, / сынѣва</i>	<b>Христѣвъ</b> , Christ's, <i>я. Христѣво, / Христѣва</i>
<b>Петровъ</b> , Peter's, <i>Петрово, Петрова</i>	<b>Материнъ</b> , mother's, <i>материно, -рина</i>
<b>Отцевъ</b> , father's, <i>отцево, отцева</i>	<b>Дочеринъ</b> , daughter's, <i>дочерино, дочерина</i>
<b>Героевъ</b> , hero's, <i>героево, героева</i>	
<b>Павловъ</b> , Paul's, <i>Павлово, Павлова</i>	

**Никѣтинъ**, Nicetas's, *н. Никѣтино*, *ф. Царѣцынъ*, the queen's, *н. царѣцyno*,  
**Никѣтина**. *ф. -цына* [*-цына*  
**Ильинъ**, Elias's, *Ильино*. **Ильина**. *Дѣвицынъ*, the girl's, *дѣвицyno*,

The adjective **Христовъ** takes in the prepositional singular the inflection **ѣ** (instead of **омѣ**) in the phrase: **по Рождествѣ Христовѣ** (instead of **Христовомѣ**), after the *Birth of Christ*.

According to the 10th paradigm (**бѣлъ**) are declined the qualifying adjectives in the apocopated termination in **ѣ** (neut. *о*, fem. *а*), with the exception of those in **мѣ**, **чѣ**, **шѣ** and **щѣ**, which belong to the 16th paradigm, remembering to change **ѣ** into **и** after the gutturals (**з**, **к**, **х**), and remarking that the tonic accent, which remains on the same syllable in all the inflections of the full termination, is often transferred, in the apocopated, to the last syllable, sometimes in the feminine only, and at other times also in the neuter and plural. Such are:

<b>Радъ</b> , joyous, <i>н. радо</i> , <i>ф. рада</i> ; <i>рѣ</i>	<b>Высокъ</b> , high, <i>н. высоко</i> , <i>ф. высока</i> ;
<b>рады</b>	<i>рѣ. высоки</i>
<b>Гораздъ</b> , expert, -до, -да; <b>горазды</b>	<b>Силенъ</b> , vigorous, <i>сильно</i> , <i>сильна</i> ;
<b>Новъ</b> , new, ново, нова, новы	<i>сильны</i>
<b>Слабъ</b> , weak, слабо, слабо; <b>слабы</b>	<b>Уменъ</b> , wise, умно, умна; <b>умны</b>
<b>Цѣлъ</b> , entire, цѣло, цѣла; <b>цѣлы</b>	<b>Тепелъ</b> , hot, тепло, тепла; <b>теплы</b>
<b>Великъ</b> , great, велико, велика; <b>велики</b>	<b>Легокъ</b> , light, легко, легка; <b>легки</b>
<b>Сухъ</b> , dry, сѣхо, суха; <b>сѣхи</b>	<b>Добръ</b> , good, добро, добра; <b>добры</b>
<b>Крѣпокъ</b> , strong, крѣпко, крѣпка; <b>крѣпки</b>	<b>Желтъ</b> , yellow, желто, желта; <b>желты</b> .
	<b>Боленъ</b> , sick, больно, больна; <b>больны</b> .

According to the 11th paradigm (**Репнинъ**) are declined family names in **овѣ**, **евѣ**, **инѣ** and **ынѣ** (fem. *а*), which take in the prepositional singular masculine the inflection **ѣ** (instead of **омѣ**). Such are:

<b>Суворовъ</b> , Soovorof, <i>ф. Суворова</i>	<b>Дмитріевъ</b> , Dmitrief, <i>ф. Дмитріева</i>
<b>Кутузовъ</b> , Kootoosof, <i>Кутузова</i>	<b>Гурьевъ</b> , Goorief, <i>Гурьева</i>
<b>Ломоносовъ</b> , Lomonossof, <i>Ломоносова</i> .	<b>Васильевъ</b> , Vassilief, <i>Васильева</i>
<b>Строгановъ</b> , Stroganof, <i>Строганова</i>	<b>Державинъ</b> , Derzhavin, <i>Державина</i> .
<b>Крыловъ</b> , Krylof, <i>Крылова</i>	<b>Карамзинъ</b> , Karamzin, <i>Карамзина</i>
<b>Шлишковъ</b> , Shishkof, <i>Шлиškova</i> .	<b>Княжнинъ</b> , Kniazhnin, <i>Княжнина</i>
<b>Херасковъ</b> , Kheraskof, <i>Хераскова</i>	<b>Пушкинъ</b> , Pooshkin, <i>Пушкина</i>
<b>Орловъ</b> , Orlof, <i>Орлова</i>	<b>Потемкинъ</b> , Potiomkin, <i>Потемкина</i> .
	<b>Голлицынъ</b> , Golitzin, <i>Голлицына</i>

Foreign family names, such as: **Базедовъ**, *Basedow*; **Канкринъ**, *Cancrin*, are declined like the substantives, and, having no feminine, are indeclinable when referring to females. The same

remark applies equally to Russian family names ending in *вичъ*; but sometimes in feminine they take the termination *вичева*, which then is declined as an adjective; e. g. у Графини Канкричъ, at the Countess Cancrin; у Госпожи Максимовичъ or Максимовичевой, at Madame Maximovitch.

According to the 12th, 13th and 14th paradigms (Кáшинъ, Бородинó, Мýрина) are declined such names of towns, boroughs and villages, as end in the masculine in *овъ, евъ, инъ, ынъ*; in the neuter in *ово, ево, ино, ыно*, and in the feminine in *ова, ева, ина, ына*, which take also in the *prepositional* singular masculine and neuter the inflection *ѣ* (instead of *омъ*). Such are:

- |  |   |
|--|---|
| 1) ( <i>городъ</i> ) Борисовъ, Borissof. | Царѣцyno, Tzaritzino.                       |
| Могилевъ, Mohilef                        | Останкинo, Ostankino.                       |
| Алѣксинъ, Alexin.                        | 3) ( <i>деревня</i> ) Парголова, Pargolova. |
| Козловъ, Kozlof.                         | Краскова, Kraskova.                         |
| 2) ( <i>селo</i> ) Тарутинo, Tarootino   | Леташева, Letachova.                        |
| Измáйлово, Izmailovo                     | Валужина, Valootina.                        |

Exceptions to this rule are the names of the following towns: Кíевъ, *Kíef*; Псковъ, *Pleskov*; Харьковъ, *Charkof*; Гдовъ, *Gdof*; Ростóвъ, *Rostof*; Орловъ, *Orlof*; as also the names of foreign towns, e. g. Берлинъ, *Berlin*, which are declined like substantives, having in the *instrumental* singular the inflection *омъ* (and not *ынъ*). The same is the case with the names of towns in *скъ, цкъ* and *ь*; as: Смолѣнскъ, *Smolensk*; Полоцкъ, *Polotsk*; Ярославъ, *Yaroslavl*, &c.

In such names of towns as are formed of *новъ* and *бѣло*, as: Нóвгородъ, *Novgorod*; Бѣлоóзеро, *Bieloozero*, both the adjective and substantive are declined: *G.* Новагóрода, Бѣлаóзера; *D.* Новугóроду, Бѣлуóзеру; *I.* Новымъ-гóродомъ, Бѣлымъ-óзеромъ; *P.* о Новѣгóродѣ, Бѣлѣóзерѣ (taking also the inflection *ѣ* instead of *омъ*).

According to the 15th paradigm (Госпóдень) is declined the individual possessive adjective:

Бóжiй, of God, *н.* Бóжiе, *ж.* Бóжiа, *р.* Бóжiи,

which must not be confounded with the common possessive adjective бóжескiй, *divine, relating to the attributes of God*. The adjective Бóжiй takes also the inflections of mixed termination, as in Бóжье дѣрево, *southern wood* (a plant); Бóжья корóвка, *coccineal, the lady-bird*; *G.* Бóжьяго дѣрева, Бóжьей корóвки, *D.* Бóжьему дѣреву, &c.

According to the 16th paradigm (синъ) are declined\* the qualifying adjectives in the apocopated termination ending in *o* or *z* (neut. *e*, fem. *a*), and also those in *мѣзъ*, *чѣзъ*, *шѣзъ*, *щѣзъ* (neut. *e*, fem. *a*), remembering to change *я* into *a* and *ю* into *у* after the hissings (ж, ч, ш, щ). Such are:

Дре́вень, ancient. <i>я</i> дре́вне, <i>ф</i> дре́вня	Свѣ́жъ, fresh, <i>я</i> свѣ́же, <i>ф</i> свѣ́жа
И́скренень, sincere, и́скренне, -ення	Ры́жъ, carroty, ры́же, ры́жа
Поро́женъ, empty, поро́жне, поро́жня	Гора́чъ, burning, горячо́, горяча́
Дю́жъ, robust, дю́же, дю́жа	Хоро́шъ, good, хорошо́, хороша́
Похо́жъ, semblable, похо́же, похо́жа	То́щъ, fasting, то́ще, тоща́

According to the 17th paradigm (рыбій) are declined the common possessive adjectives in *ій*, *овій*, *евоі* (neut. *о*, fem. *а*), which are formed from the specific names of animals; e. g. Third declension.

Оле́ній, of deer, <i>я</i> оле́нье, <i>ф</i> оле́нья	Пти́чій, of bird, <i>я</i> пти́чье, <i>ф</i> пти́чья
Собо́лій, of sable, собо́лье, собо́лья	Пяту́шій, of cock, пята́шье, пята́шья
Ко́зий, of goat, ко́зье, ко́зья	Верблю́жій, of camel, верблю́жье, верблю́жья
Коро́вій, of cow, коро́вье, коро́вья	Леба́жій, of swan, леба́жье, леба́жья
Ове́чій, of sheep, ове́чье, ове́чья	Воло́вій, of ox, воло́вье, воло́вья
Медвѣ́жій, of bear, медвѣ́жье, медвѣ́жья	Конѣ́вій, of horse, конѣ́вье, конѣ́вья
Бара́ній, of ram, бара́нье, бара́нья	Му́шій, of fly, му́шье, му́шья
Гова́жій, of ox, гова́жье, гова́жья	Теля́чій, of calf, теля́чье, теля́чья
Слоно́вій, of elephant, слоно́вье, -вья	Клопо́вій, of bug, клопо́вье, клопо́вья
Сомо́вій, of silurus, сомо́вье, сомо́вья	Волч́ій, of wolf, волч́ье, волч́ья
Лисѣ́ій, of fox, лисѣ́е, лисѣ́я	Челове́чій, of man, челове́чье, -вѣчья

The possessive adjective *челове́чій* is used when applied to man as an animal, and the adjective *челове́ческий* (*м.* *о*, *ф.* *а*) to man as an intelligent being.

### EXERCISES ON THE ADJECTIVES.

It is necessary to observe preliminarily that according to the rules of construction in the Russian language the adjective is usually placed before the substantive, when it does not form the attribute of the proposition; and that the verb *to be* is commonly understood in the present.

An empty pocket; the pocket is empty. A strong castle; Apocope of the termination.  
 Пусто́й карма́нь; (есть) . Крѣпкі́й за́мокъ;  
 the castle is strong. A faithful servant; the servant has been  
 . Вѣрный слуга́; бы́лъ



faithful. The soft wax; the wax is soft. A quiet sleep; the  
 . Мягкій воскъ; . Спокойный сонъ;

sleep is quiet. A worthy son; the son is worthy. A true  
 . Достойный сынъ; . Истинный

friend; the friend is true. Perfect repose; the repose  
 другъ; . Совершенный покой;

will be perfect. A transparent glass; the glass is transparent.  
 будетъ . Прозрачный стеклѣ; .

An ancient tradition; the tradition was ancient. A hot summer;  
 Древній преданіе; было . Тёплый лѣто;

the summer will be hot. A blunt pen; the pen is blunt.  
 будетъ . Тупой перѣ; .

An old hut; the hut is old. A blue paper; the paper is  
 Вѣтхій хижина; . Синій бумага;

blue. New houses; the houses are new. Rich families;  
 . Новый домъ; (суть) . Богатый семья;

the families were rich. Red ensigns; the ensigns will be red.  
 были . Красный знамя; будутъ .

Degrees of White paper; whiter paper; the whitest paper. The Neva  
 signification Бѣлый бумага; . Невá

is rapid, and the Volga is more rapid. The milk is  
 (есть) быстрый, а Волга . Молоко

liquid, and the water is more liquid. A deep brook; a deeper  
 жидкій, а вода . Глубокій ручей;

river. The houses are high, and the towers are higher.  
 рѣка. Домъ (суть) высокій, а башня .

Good tea; better tea; the best tea. The dogs are little;  
 Хорошій чай; . Собака малый;

the cats are less; but the mice are the least. The father is  
 кошка ; но мышь f , Отецъ

young; the mother is younger; but the sister is the youngest.  
 молодѣй: мать f : но сестра .

The hay is dear, and the straw is dearer. Milk is sweet;  
Сѣно дорогѣй, а солома . Молоко сладкій;

sugar is sweeter; but honey is the sweetest of all.

сахаръ ; но мѣдъ .

Some whitish paper; some reddish ink; some blackish  
Бѣлый бумага; бѣлый чернила *pl*; чѣрный

water; the colour is bluish. A little red cow; a little pony;  
водѣ; краска (*есть*) синій. Бѣлый коровка; малый лошадка;

a little piebald horse; a poor little girl; the grey-headed  
пѣгій лошадка; бѣдный дѣвочка; старичекъ

man is very old; the little old woman is very good. Very white  
(*есть*) старій; старушка добрый. Бѣлый

paper; the paper is very white; very dry wood; the wood  
бумага; . . . ; сухой дрова *pl*;

is very dry.

The master of the large gardens, and the mistress of the new Declension  
Хозяинъ обширный садъ, и хозяйка новѣй termination.

house. A glass of good water and of red wine; whole  
домъ. Стаканъ хорóшій водѣ и краснѣй винó; чѣмъ

pots of pork-fat and of fir-resin. Do good  
горшóкъ свиной сѣло и еловый смóла. Дѣлай (*acc.*) добро

to poor children and to infirm old men, and do not go  
бѣдный дитѣ и дряхлый старикъ, и не ходи

into the fields of others. This is the house of the Prince  
по (*dat.*) полó чужóй. Вотъ (*nom.*) домъ Князь

Dolgoruki, that is the palace of the Countess Tolstoi, and  
Долгорукій, вотъ дворецъ Графиня Толсто́й, а

there are the large gardens of the young Counts Zavadovskii.  
вотъ обширный садъ молодой Графъ Завадо́вскій.

I have admired the agreeable song of the nightingale of last year.  
Я дивился (*dat.*) прѣятнѣй пѣнѣ соловѣй прошлóгоднѣй.

To cut a swan's quill with a blunt penknife. There are  
 Чинить (acc.) лебединый перо́ тупо́й но́жикъ. Вотъ (nom.)

some goose quills, some red crayons, some thick blank books,  
 гуси́ный перо́, кра́сный каранда́шъ, то́лстый тетрадь f,

some oak-rulers, and great mathematical compasses, and here  
 дубо́вый линѣ́йка, и большо́й циркуль m, а вотъ

are some woollen clothes, some silk stockings, some beaver hats,  
 суконный кафта́нъ, шелко́вый чуло́къ, пухо́вый шля́па,

fine linen, and still finer lace. Love good  
 то́нкий полотно́ и тонча́йший кру́жево. Люби́ (acc.) непоро́чный

morals; read useful books; honour old people;  
 нравъ; чита́й (acc.) поле́зный кни́га; чт́ (acc.) ста́рый\* лю́ди pl:

praise good actions; keep the honest and faithful  
 хвали́ (acc.) до́брый де́ло; береги́ (acc.) че́стный и ве́рный

servant. Give the new book to the most attentive  
 слуга́. Подари́ (acc.) но́вый кни́га (dat.) са́мый приле́жный

scholar. You praise the weather of spring, the splendour  
 учени́къ. Ты хвали́шь (acc.) пого́да весе́нный, я́сность f

of the summer nights, the coolness of autumn, and the colds  
 ле́тний но́чь f, прохла́да о́сенний и хо́лодь

of winter. I esteem the celebrated men, and the illustrious  
 зи́мний. Я уважа́ю (acc.) сла́вный мужъ и знамени́тый

commanders of ancient times. The great military manoeuvres of  
 полково́дец дре́вний вре́мя. Большо́й манёвръ въ (prep.)

this year will take place at Kransnoe Selo, and on the  
 ны́нѣшній годъ бу́дутъ въ (prep.) Кра́сное Село́ и на (prep.)

mountain of Douderhof.

Гора́ Ду́дергофскі́й.

Declension  
 of the apo-  
 copated ter-  
 mination.

He has left the house of his father, and he does  
 Онъ вы́халъ изъ (gen.) домо́ отце́въ, и де́лаеть (acc.)

good to the daughter of his sister. He has sold the property  
 добро́ (dat.) дочѣ́ f се́стринъ. Онъ про́далъ (acc.) имѣ́ніе

of his wife to the son of his brother. To visit the temples of  
 жѣнинъ (*dat.*) сынъ брѣтнинъ. Посѣщать (*acc.*) храмъ  
 the Lord and the churches of God. To resign one's self to  
 Господень и цѣрковь Божій. Повиноваться (*dat.*)  
 the will of the Lord, and to acknowledge the majesty of the  
 воля Господень, и познавать (*acc.*) величество

name of God. The first Russian Grammar was written by  
 имя Божій. Первый Русскій Грамматика была написана (*instr.*)

the immortal Lomonossof, and the History of Russia by  
 бессмертный Ломоносовъ, и Исторія Россійскій (*instr.*)

Nicholas Mikhailovitsch Karamzin. The battles against the  
 Николай Михайлович Карамзинъ. Сраженіе съ (*instr.*)

French were fought near Borodino and Borissof.  
 Французъ происходили подъ (*instr.*) Бородино и подъ Борисовъ.

I have lived at Novgorod and at Bieloozero. The villages  
 Я живалъ въ (*prep.*) Новгородъ и въ Белоозеро. Деревня

of the Princess Saltykof are situated near the town of Kashin.

Княгиня Салтыковъ лежатъ подъ (*instr.*) городъ Кашинъ.

There is a cloak of fox-skin, a sable- cap, a bird- nest, Declension  
 Вотъ (*nom.*) шуба лисій, соболій шапка, птичій гнѣздо, of the mixed  
 termination

some hare- skins, and some elephant's teeth. A pound of deer-  
 заячій мехъ и слоновій зубъ. Пудъ оленин

flesh, a yard of ox- skin, and a pound of calf's brains. Do  
 мясо, аршинъ воловій кожа, и фунтъ телячій мозгъ. Не

not go on the track of a wolf, and do not enter into the den  
 ходи по (*dat.*) слѣдъ волчій, и не входи въ (*acc.*) берлогу

of the bear. A dissertation on the man's eye, and on the  
 медвѣжій. Разсужденіе о (*prep.*) человѣчій глазъ, и о

fish- head. He deals in isinglass, in ox- fat,  
 рыбій головъ. Онъ торгуетъ (*instr.*) рыбій клей, бычачій сало,

in goats' skins, and in cocks' combs.

козій шкура, и петушій гребень *m.*

Declension  
of various  
adjectives

The braggart is like the jay, adorned with  
Хвасту́нь (есть) похо́жий на (acc.) со́я, укра́шенный (instr.)

peacocks' feathers. The brother of the neighbour has arrived from  
павли́ний перо́. Братъ сосѣдовъ при́халъ изъ (gen.)

a distant town, and the sister from a more distant village.  
да́льний городъ, а сестра́ изъ да́льний деревня.

John's coat is small, but that of Peter is still  
Ива́новъ пла́тье (есть) у́зкій, но (пла́тье) Петро́въ (есть) ещё

smaller. The good little old woman lives in a damp  
у́зкій. До́брый старушка живётъ въ (prep.) сыро́й

house, situated near the village Tzaritzino. I have bought a  
домъ, лежа́щій подъ (instr.) село́ Царицыно. Я купи́лъ (acc.)

cloak of bear-skin with a collar of beaver-skin and a  
шу́ба медвѣ́жий съ (instr.) воротникъ бобра́вый, и

cap of beaver-skin with a silk-ribbon. There is a handsome  
ша́пка бобра́вый съ шелко́вый лента. Вотъ (nom.) прекра́сный

book with a rich binding of morocco. Where shall we  
кни́га въ (prep.) бога́тый пере́плеть са́фьянный. Гдѣ мы

find an instance of purer self-denial, of more exalted  
найдёмъ примѣръ чистый самоотверже́ніе, высо́кій

love for the native land?

любо́вь къ (dat.) оте́чество?

## THE NUMERALS.

Division of  
numerals.

41. — The *numerals* (числительныя имена́) are of two kinds: 1) the *cardinal* numerals (ко́личественныя), which express the number; and 2) the *ordinal* numerals (по́рядочныя), which indicate order or rank, and are formed (with exception of *пе́рвый*) from the cardinals, as is seen below.

## CARDINAL NUMERALS.

## ORDINAL NUMERALS.

CARDINAL NUMERALS.	ORDINAL NUMERALS.
1. одинъ, <i>м.</i> одно́, <i>ж.</i> одна́ ( <i>сл. еди́нь, ѡно, ѡна</i> ) . . . .	пе́рвый, <i>м.</i> пе́рвое, <i>ж.</i> пе́рвая, first.
2. два, <i>ж.</i> двѣ . . . . .	второ́й, о́е, а́я, second.
3. три . . . . .	тре́тій, тье́, тья́, third.
4. четы́ре . . . . .	четы́ртый, ое́, ая́, fourth.
5. пять . . . . .	пя́тый, ое́, ая́, fifth.
6. шесть . . . . .	шесто́й, о́е, а́я, sixth.
7. семь ( <i>сл. се́дьмь</i> ) . . . .	се́дьмо́й, о́е, а́я, seventh.
8. во́семь ( <i>сл. осьмь</i> ) . . . .	осьмо́й, о́е, а́я, eighth.
9. де́вять . . . . .	девя́тый, ое́, ая́, ninth.
10. де́сять . . . . .	деся́тый, ое́, ая́, tenth.
11. одинна́дцать . . . . .	одинна́дцатый <i>or</i> пе́рвый на- деся́ть 11th.
12. двѣнна́дцать ( <i>сл. двана́дцать</i> ) . . . . .	двѣнна́дцатый <i>or</i> второ́й на- деся́ть, 12th.
13. тринна́дцать . . . . .	тринна́дцатый <i>or</i> тре́тій на- деся́ть, 13th.
14. четы́рнадцать . . . . .	четы́рнадцатьый <i>or</i> четы́ртый на-деся́ть, 14th.
15. пятна́дцать . . . . .	пятна́дцатый <i>or</i> пя́тый на-де- ся́ть, 15th.
16. шестна́дцать . . . . .	шестна́дцатый <i>or</i> шесто́й на- деся́ть, 16th.
17. семна́дцать . . . . .	семна́дцатый <i>or</i> се́дьмо́й на- деся́ть, 17th.
18. осьмна́дцать <i>or</i> восемна́д- цать . . . . .	осьмна́дцатый <i>or</i> осьмо́й на- деся́ть, 18th.
19. девятна́дцать . . . . .	девятна́дцатый <i>or</i> девя́тый на- деся́ть, 19th.
20. два́дцать ( <i>сл. два́дцать</i> ) . . . . .	два́дцатый ( <i>сл. два́дцатьый</i> ), ое́, ая́, 20th.
21. два́дцать одинъ . . . . .	два́дцать пе́рвый, 21st.
22. два́дцать два . . . . .	два́дцать второ́й, 22d.
30. три́дцать . . . . .	три́дцатый, ое́, ая́, 30th.
40. со́рокъ ( <i>сл. четы́редцать</i> ). . . . .	сороко́вый ( <i>сл. четы́редцатьый</i> ), о́е, а́я, 40th.
50. пятьдеся́ть . . . . .	пятидеся́тый, ое́, ая́, 50th.

60. шестьдесятъ . . . . .	шестидесятый, ое, ая, 60th.
70. семьдесятъ . . . . .	семидесятый, ое, ая, 70th.
80. восемьдесятъ . . . . .	осмидесятый, ое, ая, 80th.
90. девяносто ( <i>sl. девять-десять</i> ) . . . . .	девяностый ( <i>sl. девяностый</i> ) 90th.
100. сто . . . . .	сотый, ое, ая, hundredth.
200. двѣсти . . . . .	двухъ-сотый, ое, ая, 200th.
300. триста . . . . .	трѣхъ-сотый, ое, ая, 300th.
400. четыреста . . . . .	четырёхъ-сотый, ое, ая, 400th.
500. пятьсотъ . . . . .	пятисотый, ое, ая, 500th.
600. шестьсотъ . . . . .	шестисотый, ое, ая, 600th.
700. семьсотъ . . . . .	семисотый, ое, ая, 700th.
800. восемьсотъ . . . . .	осмисотый, ое, ая, 800th.
900. девятьсотъ . . . . .	девятисотый, ое, ая, 900th.
1000. тысяча ( <i>sl. тысяща</i> ) . . . . .	тысячный, ое, ая, thousandth.
2000. двѣ тысячи . . . . .	двухъ-тысячный, ое, ая, two thousandth.
10,000. десять тысячъ ( <i>sl. тма</i> ). . . . .	десятитысячный, ое, ая, ten thousandth.
100,000. сто тысячъ . . . . .	стотысячный, ое, ая, 100-thousandth.
1,000,000. миллионъ . . . . .	миллионный, ое, ая, millionth.
2,000,000. два миллиона . . . . .	двухъ-миллионный, ое, ая, two milliophth.
1,000,000,000. тысяча миллионовъ . . . . .	тысячемиллионный, ое, ая, 1000-millionth.
1,000,000,000,000. биллионъ . . . . .	биллионный, ое, ая, billionth.

To the cardinal numerals belong the *fractional* (дрóбныя) numerals, such as: половѣна, *the half*; треть, *the third*; чѣтверть, *the fourth*; осьмѣха, *the eighth*; полторá, *one and a half*; полтретья, *two and a half*; полчетвертá, *three and a half*, &c.; and to the ordinal numerals belong also the circumstantial adjectives другóй, *other*, and послѣднѣй, *last*: другóй being used instead of вторóй, *second*, and послѣднѣй being opposed to пѣрвый, *first*.

From the cardinal numerals *два, три, &c.* as far as *десять*, as also from *сто*, are formed the *collective* (собира́тельные) numerals: *двое, трое, четверо, пятеро, &c., десятеро, сотеро*. The following words also belong to the collective numerals: *оба* (*f. оба́*), *both*; *двойка, two*; *тройка, three*; *пятóкъ, five*; *десятокъ, ten*; *дюжина, a dozen*; *со́тня, a hundred*.

The numerals *одинъ* and *первый* are also used as qualifying adjectives, and in that case take some inflections peculiar to adjectives. *Одинъ* takes the augmentative termination *одинёхонекъ* and *одинёшенекъ*; and *первый* takes the diminutive termination *первенький*, as also the inflection of the superlative *первѣйшій* or *самый первый*.

42. — As regards declension, the numerals may be considered as substantive and adjective. The *substantive* numerals are: *сорокъ, сто, девяносто, тысяча, миллионъ, половина, треть f., пятóкъ, десятокъ, дюжина, &c.* The gender of these, as also their declension, is indicated by their termination. All the ordinal numbers, and the cardinal *одинъ*, are numerals adjective. All the other numerals are sometimes adjective, requiring the same case as the nouns to which they are joined, and sometimes substantive, in which occasion they require the noun to which they belong to be put in the genitive case, as will be seen later. Some of the last mentioned have the inflections of nouns, while others have inflections peculiar to themselves. A general view of the declension of the numerals may be obtained from the following table.

Declension  
of the  
numerals



## PARADIGMS OF THE DECLENSION OF THE NUMERALS.

Parad.	Nom. or Accus.	Gen. or Acc.	Dative.	Instrument.	Prepos.
1.	м. ОДИНЪ, н. ОДНА, f. ОДНА, one . . . . .	(See its declension in the <i>Proculus</i> parad 15).			
2.	м. н. ДВА, f. ДВѢ, two . . . . .	ДВУХЪ . . . . .	ДВУМЪ . . . . .	ДВУМѢ . . . . .	ДВУХЪ . . . . .
3.	м. н. ОБА, both . . . . .	ОБОИХЪ . . . . .	ОБОИМЪ . . . . .	ОБОИМѢ . . . . .	ОБОИХЪ . . . . .
	fem. ОБѢ . . . . .	ОБѢИХЪ . . . . .	ОБѢИМЪ . . . . .	ОБѢИМѢ . . . . .	ОБѢИХЪ . . . . .
4.	три, three . . . . .	трѣхъ . . . . .	трѣмъ . . . . .	трѣмѢ . . . . .	трѣхъ . . . . .
5.	четыре, four . . . . .	четырёхъ . . . . .	четыремъ . . . . .	четыремѢ . . . . .	четырёхъ . . . . .
6.	ДВЕ and ДВѢ, two . . . . .	ДВѢИХЪ . . . . .	ДВѢИМЪ . . . . .	ДВѢИМѢ . . . . .	ДВѢИХЪ . . . . .
7.	ЧЕТЫРЕ and ЧЕТВЕРЬ, four . . . . .	ЧЕТЫРѢИХЪ . . . . .	ЧЕТЫРѢИМЪ . . . . .	ЧЕТЫРѢИМѢ . . . . .	ЧЕТЫРѢИХЪ . . . . .
8.	пять, five . . . . .	пяти . . . . .	пяти . . . . .	пятью . . . . .	пяти . . . . .
9.	восьмь, eight . . . . .	осьми . . . . .	осьмѢ . . . . .	восьмью . . . . .	осьми . . . . .
10.	пятьдесятъ, fifty . . . . .	пятидесяти . . . . .	пятидесяти . . . . .	пятидесятью . . . . .	пятидесяти . . . . .
11.	ДВѢСЯТЬ, two hundred . . . . .	ДВУХЪ СѢТЪ . . . . .	ДВУМЪ СѢТѢ . . . . .	ДВУМѢ СѢТѢ . . . . .	ДВУХЪ СѢТѢ . . . . .
12.	ПЯТЬСОТЪ, five hundred . . . . .	ПЯТИ СѢТЪ . . . . .	ПЯТИ СѢТѢ . . . . .	ПЯТЬЮ СѢТѢ . . . . .	ПЯТИ СѢТѢ . . . . .
13.	м. н. ПОТОРОА, one and a half . . . . .	ПОЛУТОРА . . . . .	ПОЛУТОРУ . . . . .	ПОЛУТОРѢ . . . . .	ПОЛУТОРА . . . . .
	fem. ПОТОРОА . . . . .	ПОЛУТОРА . . . . .	ПОЛУТОРА . . . . .	ПОЛУТОРѢ . . . . .	ПОЛУТОРА . . . . .
14.	м. н. ПОДТРЕХЪ, two and a half . . . . .	ПОДТРЕХЪ . . . . .	ПОДТРЕХЪ . . . . .	ПОДТРЕХѢ . . . . .	ПОДТРЕХЪ . . . . .
	fem. ПОДТРЕХЪ . . . . .	ПОДТРЕХЪ . . . . .	ПОДТРЕХЪ . . . . .	ПОДТРЕХѢ . . . . .	ПОДТРЕХЪ . . . . .
15.	м. н. ПОЛУТРЕХЪ . . . . .	ПОЛУТРЕХЪ . . . . .	ПОЛУТРЕХЪ . . . . .	ПОЛУТРЕХѢ . . . . .	ПОЛУТРЕХЪ . . . . .
	фл. 3 в. ПОЛУТРЕХЪ . . . . .	ПОЛУТРЕХЪ . . . . .	ПОЛУТРЕХЪ . . . . .	ПОЛУТРЕХѢ . . . . .	ПОЛУТРЕХЪ . . . . .
16.	снг. ПОДНАНЬ м. midday . . . . .	ПОДНАНѢ . . . . .	ПОДНАНѢ . . . . .	ПОДНАНѢ . . . . .	ПОДНАНѢ . . . . .
	фл. н. ПОДНАНЬ . . . . .	ПОДНАНѢ . . . . .	ПОДНАНѢ . . . . .	ПОДНАНѢ . . . . .	ПОДНАНѢ . . . . .
	снг. ПОДГОДА, half a year . . . . .	ПОДГОДА . . . . .	ПОДГОДА . . . . .	ПОДГОДА . . . . .	ПОДГОДА . . . . .
	фл. н. ПОДГОДА . . . . .	ПОДГОДА . . . . .	ПОДГОДА . . . . .	ПОДГОДА . . . . .	ПОДГОДА . . . . .

With respect to the *tonic accent* in the declension of the numerals we may remark, that it is generally placed on the inflections of the cases, as happens in all the numerals from *одинъ* to *десять*, and from *двадцать* to *восемьдесятъ*, as also in *десять*, *тридцать*, *четыре* and other similar words. The numerals *пять*, *шесть*, &c. as far as *десять*, as also *двадцать* and *тридцать*, while they are declined as feminine nouns in *а*, differ from them in the accent, which is placed on the last vowel in all the cases: *пяти*, *шести*, *десяти*, &c., whilst in the nouns the accent is transposed only in the prepositional case: *въ пяти*, *въ шести*, &c. The numeral *сорокъ*, which is declined like nouns in *а*, differs from them in the accent; for no dissyllabic noun can, without the elision of the vowel, transfer its accent from the first syllable to the inflection of the cases, as happens in *сорока*; *сорока*, &c.

According to the 6th and 7th paradigms (двое and четверо) are declined the similar collective numerals; viz:

6th par.) Трое and троѣ, three.	Шестеро and шестеры, six
Обое and обоѣ, two.	Десятеро and десятеры, ten
7th par.) Пятеро and пятеры, five.	Сотеро and сотеры, hundred.

Двое, троѣ, четверо, &c., are used with the names of animate beings of the masculine and neuter gender; and двоѣ, троѣ, четверы, &c., with the names of inanimate and abstract objects which only occur in the plural; e. g. двое слугъ, *two servants*; троѣ часы, *three watches*. We may still observe that обое had formerly a singular, the genitive, обоего, of which is still found in the expression: жители обоего пола, *the natives of both sexes*.

According to the 8th and 10th paradigms (пять and пятьдесятъ) are declined the similar numbers following, with the exception of восемь, which is declined by the 9th paradigm; e. g.

8th par.) Шесть, six, <i>gen.</i> шести	Тридцать, thirty, <i>gen.</i> тридцати
Семь, seven, <i>сечѣ</i>	[десяти]
Девять, nine, <i>девяти</i>	10th par.) Шестьдесятъ, sixty, <i>шести-</i>
Десять, ten, <i>десяти</i>	Семьдесятъ, seventy, <i>семи-</i>
Одиннадцать, eleven, <i>один-</i>	десяти
надцати	Восемьдесятъ, eighty,
Двадцать, twenty, <i>двадцати</i>	осмидесяти

The first member *восемь* of the last word is declined according to the 9th paradigm: *gen.* осмидесяти, *instr.* восемью-десятью or осмидесятью.

According to the 11th and 12th paradigms (двести and пятьсотъ) are declined the following numerals; viz:

11th par.) Триста, three hundred, <i>gen.</i>	Семьсотъ, 700, <i>gen.</i> семи
трехъ сотъ [сотъ]	сотъ
Четыреста, 400, <i>четырехъ</i>	Восемьсотъ, 800, <i>осми сотъ</i>
12th par.) Шестьсотъ, 600, <i>шести сотъ</i>	Девятьсотъ, 900, <i>девяти сотъ</i>

Двѣсти (instead of *дваста*) is the Slavonic dual of сто, and was used with два and оба, as we shall see later.

According to the 13th paradigm (полтора) are declined such numerals as are formed of полъ, *the half*, with the apocopated genitive of the ordinal number, with the exception of пол-третья, which is declined according to the 14th paradigm: e. g.

Получетверта́, three and a half, <i>gen.</i> полу́четверта; <i>sem.</i> полчетверты́.		
Полпята́, four and a half, . . . полу́пята; . . . полпять.		
Полшестá, five and a half, . . . полу́шеста; . . . полшесты́		
Полдесята́, nine and a half, . . . полу́десята; . . . полдесяты́		

The compound numeral **полтора́ста**, *a hundred and fifty* (*a hundred and a half*) forms **полу́тора́ста** in all the oblique cases. All these words, however, with the exception of **полтора́** and **полтора́ста**, are antiquated, and no longer used.

According to the 15th and 16th paradigms (**по́лдень** and **по́лгода**) are declined such nouns as are formed with the numeral **по́ль**, *the half*; e. g.

15th p.) По́лночь, midnight, <i>gen.</i> полу́-	Полсло́ва, half a word, <i>gen.</i> полусло́ва
ночи [часá	По́лминуты́, half a minute, полу-
16th p.) Полчасá, half an hour, полу-	минуты́
По́лдень, half a day, полу́дня	Полверсты́, half a verst, полуверсты́
Полве́дра, half a pail, полу-	Поллу́нта, half a pound, полу-
ве́дра	лу́нта

We must remark that the numeral **по́ль** is joined to substantives in the genitive singular, to indicate *a half*, with the exception of **по́лдень** and **по́лночь**, which signify the *middle of the day* or *of the night*, *midday* or *midnight*. All these nouns are declined by joining **полу́** to the other cases of the simple substantive. We have still to add that **по́лдень** takes in the prepositional with **по** the inflection **у** (instead of **ъ**); thus we say: **по полу́дни**, *after noon*. Such nouns as have **полу́** in the nominative singular, as **полуо́стровъ**, *a peninsula*; **полуме́сяцъ**, *a crescent*, are declined like simple substantives.

In the compound cardinal numerals, such as: **два́дцать два**, *twenty two*; **три́дцать пять**, *thirty five*; **сто шесть**, *a hundred and six*, each number is declined separately; *G.* **двадцати́ двухъ**, **тридцати́ пяти́**, **ста́ шести́**, &c. But when they form ordinal numerals, such as: **два́дцать пе́рвый**, *twenty first*; **сто второ́й**, *hundred and second*, the ordinal number only is declined, and the cardinal numerals remain indeclinable; *G.* **два́дцать пе́рваго**, **сто второ́го**. The same is the case with **на́десять**, in the compound numbers; e. g. **пе́рвый-на́десять**, *eleventh*; **второ́й-на́десять**, *twelfth*, where the first part, **пе́рвый**, **второ́й**, is alone declined.

The other numerals follow the declension of the nouns or adjectives to which by their termination they belong. Thus

*сорокъ*, *forty*; *милліонъ*, *million*; *десятокъ*, *ten*, follow the first declensions of substantives (§ 30, *gen.* *сорока́, милліона́, десятка́*); *сто*, *a hundred*, and *девяносто*, *ninety*, follow the second; while *дюжина*, *a dozen*; *сотня*, *a hundred*; *тысяча*, *a thousand* (*instr. sing.* *тысячею* and *тысячью*) are declined according to the third. On this subject we must observe that the numerals *сорокъ*, *сто* and *девяносто* only follow the declension of the substantives when they are used as nouns to express *forties*, *hundreds* and *nineties*, and then *сорокъ* and *сто* have also a plural (*сороки́, сороковъ́; ста, сотъ, &c.*); but when they are joined to a substantive, or to another numeral, they take in the *dative* and *instrumental* cases singular the inflection of the genitive (*сорока́, ста, девяно́ста*), and sometimes even in the *prepositional*, especially with another numeral.

The ordinal numerals, which are all adjectives, terminating in *ый*, or *ой* (*neut. ое, fem. ая*), are declined according to the full termination of the adjectives, with the exception of *третій* (*н. трѣтье, f. трѣтя*), *third*, which is declined according to the mixed termination (§ 40).

The numerals *два, оба, три, четыре, двое, трое, четырео*, have the accusative like the nominative, when they are with the names of inanimate and abstract objects, and like the genitive, when with the names of animate beings. But all the rest: *пять, шесть, семь, двадцать*, &c. have always the accusative like the nominative; the same is the case with the numbers *два, три, четыре*, when joined to tens, hundreds or thousands; as *двадцать два, twenty two*; *сто три, a hundred and three*, &c., even when referring to animate objects; e. g. *собрать двадцать два воина* (and not *двадцать двухъ воиновъ*), *to unite twenty two warriors*.

43. — The cardinal numerals, in Russian, when joined with substantives follow various rules unlike those of any other language. These rules are as follows:

1. *Одинъ* agrees with its substantive in gender, number and case, and in the compound numerals, such as, *двадцать одинъ, сто одинъ*, the substantive is always put in the singular.

Special rules  
of the  
numerals.

2. The numerals *два, оба, три, четыре* (and their compounds as *двадцать два, сто четыре*, &c.), *полтора, полтретья*, and others of the same kind, when employed in the nominative or accusative, require the noun to which they belong, to be put in the *genitive singular*, observing that *два, оба, полтора, полтретья*, agree in *gender* with the noun. If there is an adjective, it takes the gender of the substantive and is put in the *nominative plural*.—With all the other numerals, from *пять*, as also with *двое, трое, четверо, пятеро*, &c., the substantive is put in the *genitive plural*, and if there be an adjective, it agrees with the noun or with the numeral, according to the sense of the phrase. Thus we say: *первые два большие стола, the two first large tables*; and *сui пять больших столовъ, these five large tables*.

This *genitive singular*, which occurs with the numerals *два, три, четыре*, is simply the Slavonic *dual*, which was used with *два* and *оба*, and which has also been retained in *дѣйстви (sl. дѣйствѣ)*. The numerals *три* and *четыре* were simple adjectives, agreeing with their substantive, while *пять* and the numerals following were considered as collective nouns, always requiring the *genitive plural* after them.

A peculiarity of the Russian language must still be mentioned: it requires the adjective which accompanies the nouns formed of the numerals *полъ* (as *полчасá, полгода*), as also the numerals *полтора, полтретья*, to be placed in the *nominative plural*: e. g. *первые полчасá, the first half hour*. But in the other cases the adjective agrees with the substantive; e. g. *въ продолженіе перваго получасá, in the space of the first half hour*.

3. With the numerals in the oblique cases, the substantive is always put in the plural. *a)* When the numerals have a gender, as: *пятѣкъ, дюжина, тысяча, миллионъ*, the noun is always put in the *genitive*, and the same rule applies equally to *сорокъ* and *сто*, when used in the plural. *b)* With the other numerals, such as: *два, оба, три, четыре, пять, сорокъ, девяносто, сто*, &c., the noun agrees with the numeral in *case*. We remark further that in words compounded of two numerals the case of the substantive is determined by the later numeral. Thus we say: *съ тремя стáми воиновъ, with three hundred warriors*, and *со ста тремя воинами, with a hundred and three warriors*;

въ сорокъ верстахъ, *at forty wersts*, and сорокъ сороковъ церквей, *one thousand six hundred churches* (forty forties).

4. With the preposition *no*, indicating the distribution of an equal quantity, the numerals два, три, четыре, две, три, четыре, retain the inflection of the nominative, and then the noun is put in the *genitive singular*, but the other numerals are put in the dative (сорокъ, сто and девяносто then take their regular inflection *y*), and the noun is put in the *genitive plural*. Thus we say: по два рубля, по пяти рублѣй, по сороку рублѣй, *to each two, five, forty roobles*.

The numerals полтора, полтретья, &c., take also with the preposition *no* the inflection *y* of the dative, and the noun in the *genitive singular*: in all other cases the noun and the numeral agree; e. g. по полутору рубль, *to each a rooble and a half*.

#### EXERCISES ON THE NUMERALS.

Man has one tongue, one nose, two eyes, У (*gen.*) человекъ (есть) одинъ языкъ, одинъ носъ, два глаза, two ears, two cheeks, two arms, two legs, ten fingers два уха, два щека, два рука, два нога, десять палець at the hands and ten toes at the feet, thirty two teeth, на (*prep.*) рука и десять палець на нога, тридцать два зубъ, and seven vertebres. Leap year has four и семь позвонокъ. Въ (*prep.*) високосный годъ (есть) четыре seasons, 12 months, 52 weeks and two days, or 366 days, время, 12 мѣсяць, 52 недѣля и два день *т*, или 366 день, or 8784 hours, or 527,040 minutes. The book has a или 8784 часъ, или 527,040 минута. Въ (*prep.*) книга (есть) hundred leaves less one. The two brothers and the two сто листъ безъ (*gen.*) одинъ. Оба братъ и оба sisters. An hour and a half, and a minute and a half. Two сестра. Полтора часъ, и полтора минута. Два roobles and a half, and three kopecs and a half. рубль *т* съ (*instr.*) половина и три копейка съ половина.

The, berkovetz has 10 poods; the pood 40 pounds; the  
 Въ (*преп.*) бѣрковецъ (*есмь*) 10 пудъ; въ пудъ 40 фунтъ; въ  
 pound 32 loths; the loth 3 zolotniks; the pound has 96  
 фунтъ 32 лоть; въ лоть 3 золотникъ; въ фунтъ 96  
 zolotniks.  
 золотникъ.

Two beaver-hats, three silk-handkerchiefs, four pen-  
 Два пуховый шляпа, три шелковый платокъ, четыре перо-  
 knives, five cups of porcelain, and six magnificent  
 чинный ножикъ, пять чашка фарфоровый, и шесть прекрасны  
 pictures. These two black crows; these three white feathers;  
 картина. Сии два чѣрный воронъ; тѣ три бѣлый перо;  
 my four new books; these five petulant children. The  
 мой четыре новыи книга; эти пять рѣзвыи дитя. Оба  
 two poor orphan boys, and the two unhappy orphan girls.  
 бѣдный сиротѣ, и оба несчастныи сиротѣ.

Two servants, three workmen, four children, six  
 Двое слугѣ, трое мастеровой, четверо дитя, шестеро  
 soldiers, two watches, three pairs of spectacles, five pairs  
 солдатъ, двои часы, трои очки, пѣтеры  
 of scissors. The first hour and a half. The first forty days;  
 ножницы. Первый полтора часъ. Первый сорокъ день;  
 the second hundred crowns, and the last thousand florins.  
 второй сто ефимокъ, и послѣдній тысяча гульденъ.

I have bought an ox and a horse, a table and  
 Я купилъ одинъ быкъ и одинъ лошадь, одинъ столъ и  
 a mirror. Twenty one roobles, fifty one  
 одинъ зѣркало. Двадцать одинъ рубль, пятьдесятъ одинъ  
 kopecks. The thousand one nights. A young man of thirty  
 копейка. Тысяча и одинъ ночь. Молодой человекъ тридцать  
 one years less twenty one days. Do not judge  
 одинъ годъ безъ (*гм.*) двадцать одинъ день. Не суди

of a man by a single fault and by a single  
о (*prep.*) человекъ по (*dat.*) одинъ проступокъ и по одинъ  
error. An officer with twenty one soldiers. Peter  
ошибка. Офицеръ съ (*instr.*) двадцать одинъ солдатъ. Петръ  
the First and Catharine the Second reigned in the  
Первый и Екатерина Второй царствовали въ (*prep.*)  
eighteenth century. The Swedes revere Charles XII, and  
восемнадцатый вѣкъ. Шведъ уважаютъ Карлъ XII, а  
the French have erected a monument to Henry IV. The  
Французъ поставили памятникъ Генрихъ IV.  
article was written on the 15th of the month of January,  
Статья, была писана (*gen.*) 15 мѣсяцъ январь *m*,  
in the year 1823, and the event relates to the VI  
годъ 1823, и происшествіе относится къ (*dat.*) VI  
century, and particularly to the year 573.  
вѣкъ, а именно къ (*dat.*) годъ 573.

A cupboard with a dozen of plates of porcelain, or  
Шкапъ съ (*instr.*) дюжина тарелка фарфоровый, или  
with twelve plates of porcelain. A droshky drawn by  
съ двѣнадцать тарелка фарфоровый. Дрожки, запряжённый (*instr.*)  
a pair of bay horses, or by two bay horses; and a carriage  
пара вороной лошади, или два вороной лошади; и карета  
drawn by six sorrel horses, or by a team of six  
запряжённый (*instr.*) шесть рыжей лошади, или шестёрка  
sorrel horses. The town is situated a thousand wersts  
рыжей лошади. Городъ лежитъ въ (*prep.*) тысяча верста  
from here, the village a hundred wersts, and the hamlet forty  
отсюда, село во сто верста, а деревня въ сорокъ  
wersts. At Moscow there were 1600 churches, or forty  
верста. Въ (*prep.*) Москва было 1600 церковь, или сорокъ  
forties of churches. I am satisfied with eighty  
сорокъ церковь. Я довольствуюсь (*instr.*) восемьдесятъ



roobles (or with two forties of roobles) a month,  
 рубль *т* (или два сорокъ рубль) въ (*acc.*) мѣсяцъ,  
 i. e. with 960 roobles a year. He will not live till  
 to есть 960 рубль въ (*acc.*) годъ. Онъ не доживётъ до (*gen.*)  
 forty years; and she died at forty three. She is  
 сорокъ лѣто; и она умерла (*gen.*) сорокъ три лѣто. Она (*есть*)  
 satisfied with forty kopecs, and she admired a  
 довольный (*instr.*) сорокъ копейка, и она удивилась (*dat.*)  
 hundred pictures. He cannot live on less than a  
 сто картина. Онъ не можетъ прожить мѣнѣе (*gen.*)  
 hundred thousand roobles a year. A town with two  
 сто тысяча рубль *т* въ (*acc.*) годъ. Городъ съ (*instr.*) два  
 towers; a chest with six drawers; a house with forty windows;  
 башня; комодъ съ шесть ящикъ; домъ съ сорокъ окно;  
 a fortress with a hundred cannons; a church with five  
 крѣпость *с* со сто пушка; церковь *о* (*prep.*) пять  
 cupolas; a house of three stories; a village with four  
 глава; домъ *о* (*prep.*) три ярусъ; деревня съ (*instr.*) четыре  
 wind-mills. I love equally the two sons and the two  
 вѣтряный мельница. Я люблю равно оба сынъ и оба  
 daughters. He has four children, and she has left five  
 дочь *с*. Онъ имѣетъ четверо дитя, а она оставила пятеро  
 orphans. My brother has not been able to manage these two  
 сиротѣ. Мой братъ не могъ слѣдить съ (*instr.*) этими два  
 restive horses. He has lived long with his five  
 упрямый лошади *с*. Онъ жилъ долго съ (*instr.*) своими пять  
 cousins german. To this million of old Prussian  
 братъ двоюродный. Къ (*dat.*) этому миллионъ старъ прусскій  
 crowns must be added a thousand of these new roobles.  
 ефимокъ надобно прибавить тысяча тѣхъ новъ рубль *т*.  
 To each a hundred roobles and forty kopecs.  
 Каждый по (*dat.*) сто рубль *т* и по (*dat.*) сорокъ копейка.

Some months have thirty days  
 Въ (*prep.*) нѣкоторый мѣсяцъ (*есть*) по (*dat.*) тридцать день *m*,  
 and others thirty one days. In each coachhouse  
 а въ другóй по тридцать одинъ день. Въ (*prep.*) каждый сарáй  
 there were two carriages, and in each carriage  
 было по (*nom.*) два карéта, а въ каждый карéта по (*nom.*)  
 three men, and four women. To each a hundred and  
 три мужчи́на и по четы́ре же́нщина. Ка́ждый по (*dat.*) сто по  
 ninety roobles and forty five kopecks. We  
 девяно́сто рубль *m* и по со́рокъ по пять ко́пѣйка. У насъ  
 have each twenty seven points. Every part of  
 (*есть*) по (*dat.*) два́дцать по семь оч́ки *m*. Ка́ждый часть *f*  
 the work is sold at the rate of 2 rooble and a half of silver.  
 сочи́нѣнiе продаётся по (*dat.*) полтора́ рубль *m* (*instr.*) серебро́.

By the morning one must not judge of midday. During  
 По (*dat.*) у́тро не до́лжно суди́ть о (*prep.*) по́лдень *m*. Въ (*acc.*)  
 the first half day he did not know what to do. At  
 пѣрвый по́лдня онъ не зна́лъ что дѣ́лать. Въ (*acc.*)  
 four o' clock in the morning, or at five o' clock in the  
 четы́ре ча́съ по (*prep.*) по́лночь *f*, или въ пять ча́съ по  
 afternoon. That happened during the latter half of  
 по́лдень *m*. Это случи́лось въ (*acc.*) по́слѣднiй по́лгода  
 the year 1844. The first half hour passed quietly. During  
 годъ 1844. Пѣрвый по́лчасá про́шлi спо́койно. Въ (*acc.*)  
 the space of the first half hour. I had a hundred and  
 продо́лженiе пѣрвый по́лчасá. За мно́ю бы́ло по́лтора́ста  
 fifty thousand roobles of annual revenue.  
 тыся́ча рубль *m* годово́й дохо́дъ.

## THE PRONOUNS.

Division  
of the  
pronouns.

44. — The *pronouns* (мѣстоимѣнія) in Russian are divided into seven kinds.

1. The *personal* pronouns (личныя) are, in the first person: я, *I*; plur. мы, *we*; in the second ты, *thou*; plur. вы, *you*; and in the third person онъ, *he* (*fem.* она, *she*; *neut.* оно, *it*); plur. они, *they* (*fem.* онѣ, *they*). There is in Russian another personal pronoun, which is applied to all the three persons and both numbers, and which is used when the action of the object returns on the agent: e. g. я себя знаю, *I know myself*; ты себя бережѣшь, *thou takest care of thyself*; мы себя обманываемъ, *we deceive ourselves*. This is called the *reflected* (возвратное) personal pronoun.

When the reflected pronoun is used at the end of the verbs, it is contracted into ся or съ; e. g. домъ строится, *the house is being built*; я моюсь, *I wash myself* (instead of строить себя, мою себя).

2. The *possessive* pronouns (притяжательныя) are, in the first person: мой, *my* or *mine*; нашъ, *our* or *ours*; in the second person: твой, *thy* or *thine*; вашъ, *your* or *yours*; and for all the three persons: the reflected свой, *my, thy, his, our, your, their*.

In Russian there is no possessive pronoun for the third person: its place being supplied by the genitive of the personal pronoun: егó, *of him* or *his*; ея, *of her* or *her*; ихъ, *of them* or *their*; e. g. я былъ у егó брата, *I have been to his brother* (*to the brother of him*); я знаю ея мужа, *I know her husband* (*the husband of her*); я это дѣлаю для ихъ дѣтѣй, *I do that for their children* (*for the children of them*).

3. The *demonstrative* pronouns (указательныя) are: сей, этотъ, оный, *this*; тотъ, *that*; такой, таковóй, толикий, *such* or *such an one*.

4. The *relative* pronouns (относительныя) are: кто, *who* or *he who*; что, *which* or *that which*; который, кой, *who*; какой, каковъ, коликій, *who* or *he who*; чей, *whose*; сколько, *how much* or *so much*.

5. The *interrogative* pronouns (вопросительныя) are the same as the relative.

6. The *determinative* (опредѣлительныя) or *ampliative* (дополнительныя) pronouns are: самъ, самый, *self*; весь, *all*; каждый, всякій, *each*. To this class belong also the numerals одинъ, *a single one* or *one only*, and оба, *both*.

The pronouns самъ and самый have the same meaning, but the former is used with the personal pronouns and with the names of animate objects, the latter with the demonstrative pronouns and the names of inanimate and abstract objects: e. g. я самъ, *myself*; онъ самъ, *himself*; самого себя, *one's self*; отецъ самъ, *the father himself*; тотъ самый, сей самый, *the very same*; самая смерть, *death itself*. The pronoun самый before a qualifying adjective expresses the superlative (§ 38. 3).

7. The *indefinite* pronouns (неопредѣлённые) are: нѣкто, *somebody*; нѣчто, *something*; никто, *nobody*; ничто, *nothing*; кто либо, кто нибудь, кто-то, кто ни есть, *whoever*; что либо, что нибудь, что-то, что ни есть, *whatever*; нѣкій, нѣкакій, нѣкоторый, какой-то, *some*; ни какой, ни который, ни одинъ, *not any, none*; другой, иной, прочій, *other*; столько, *as much, as far*; нѣсколько, *some*; много, *much*; мало, *little*; другъ друга, *each other*; тотъ и другой, *the one and the other*; всякъ, *each*.

45. — The pronouns are either substantive or adjective. 1) The *substantive* pronouns are: я, ты, онъ, себя, кто, что, нѣкто, нѣчто, никто, ничто,

## PARADIGMS OF THE DECLENSION OF THE PRONOUNS.

PARADIGMS:	SINGULAR.					PLURAL.		
	Masculine and neuter genders.					Feminine gender.		
	Nom. or Acc.	G. or A.	Dat.	Instr.	Prep.	Nom. G.D. and P.	Acc.	Instr.
1.	я, I . . . . .	меня, me . . . . .	мнѣ, me . . . . .	мною, me . . . . .	мною, me . . . . .	мы, we . . . . .	васъ, you . . . . .	вами, you . . . . .
2.	ты, thou . . . . .	тебѣ, thee . . . . .	тебѣ, thee . . . . .	тобою, thee . . . . .	тобою, thee . . . . .	онѣ, he, she, it . . . . .	ея, her . . . . .	ей, her . . . . .
3.	онъ, he . . . . .	его, his . . . . .	ему, him . . . . .	имъ, him . . . . .	имъ, him . . . . .	онѣ, he, she, it . . . . .	ея, her . . . . .	ей, her . . . . .
4.	—, himself . . . . .	себѣ, self . . . . .	себѣ, self . . . . .	собою, self . . . . .	собою, self . . . . .	онѣ, he, she, it . . . . .	ея, her . . . . .	ей, her . . . . .
5.	кто, who, he who . . . . .	кого, whom . . . . .	кому, to whom . . . . .	кѣмъ, by whom . . . . .	кѣмъ, by whom . . . . .	онѣ, he, she, it . . . . .	ея, her . . . . .	ей, her . . . . .
6.	что, which, that which . . . . .	чего, of which . . . . .	чему, to which . . . . .	чѣмъ, by which . . . . .	чѣмъ, by which . . . . .	онѣ, he, she, it . . . . .	ея, her . . . . .	ей, her . . . . .
7.	моя, my . . . . .	мое, my . . . . .	моему, to my . . . . .	моимъ, my . . . . .	моимъ, my . . . . .	онѣ, he, she, it . . . . .	ея, her . . . . .	ей, her . . . . .
8.	нашъ, our . . . . .	наше, our . . . . .	нашему, to our . . . . .	нашимъ, our . . . . .	нашимъ, our . . . . .	онѣ, he, she, it . . . . .	ея, her . . . . .	ей, her . . . . .
9.	вашъ, your . . . . .	ваше, your . . . . .	вашему, to your . . . . .	вашимъ, your . . . . .	вашимъ, your . . . . .	онѣ, he, she, it . . . . .	ея, her . . . . .	ей, her . . . . .
10.	его, his . . . . .	его, his . . . . .	его, his . . . . .	его, his . . . . .	его, his . . . . .	онѣ, he, she, it . . . . .	ея, her . . . . .	ей, her . . . . .
11.	его, his . . . . .	его, his . . . . .	его, his . . . . .	его, his . . . . .	его, his . . . . .	онѣ, he, she, it . . . . .	ея, her . . . . .	ей, her . . . . .
12.	его, his . . . . .	его, his . . . . .	его, his . . . . .	его, his . . . . .	его, his . . . . .	онѣ, he, she, it . . . . .	ея, her . . . . .	ей, her . . . . .
13.	его, his . . . . .	его, his . . . . .	его, his . . . . .	его, his . . . . .	его, his . . . . .	онѣ, he, she, it . . . . .	ея, her . . . . .	ей, her . . . . .
14.	его, his . . . . .	его, his . . . . .	его, his . . . . .	его, his . . . . .	его, his . . . . .	онѣ, he, she, it . . . . .	ея, her . . . . .	ей, her . . . . .
15.	его, his . . . . .	его, his . . . . .	его, his . . . . .	его, his . . . . .	его, his . . . . .	онѣ, he, she, it . . . . .	ея, her . . . . .	ей, her . . . . .
16.	его, his . . . . .	его, his . . . . .	его, his . . . . .	его, his . . . . .	его, his . . . . .	онѣ, he, she, it . . . . .	ея, her . . . . .	ей, her . . . . .

The *tonic accent* in the declension of the pronouns is, with some rare exceptions, placed on the terminations of the cases, as is seen in the accompanying paradigms.

of which one only (*она*) has all the three genders; *себя*, *кто*, *что* are the same in both numbers, and *себя* has no nominative. 2) All the other pronouns are *adjective*, and like the adjectives they have three genders, two numbers and seven cases, and agree with the substantive to which they belong.

46. — The substantive pronouns are declined in a peculiar manner as will be seen later. Those of the adjective pronouns which end like the adjectives, in *ый* and *ій* (or *ой*), fem. *ая*, neut. *ое*, such as: *который*, *оний*, *самый*, *каждый*, *таковой*, *всякий*, are declined according to the 1st and 2d paradigms of adjectives (§ 41); while such as have a termination differing from that of the adjectives, such as: *мой*, *наш*, *сам*, *сей*, also *такой* and *какой*, are declined in a particular way.

The following observations on the declension of pronouns are necessary.

1. The oblique cases of the pronoun of the third person (3d paradigm) take the euphonic letter *н*, when they are preceded by a preposition; e. g. *у него*, *to him*; *къ нему*, *towards him*; *съ нею*, *with her*; *о нём*, *of him*; *безъ нихъ*, *without them*, &c. But this addition does not take place when the genitive *его*, *ей*, *ихъ*, serves as a possessive pronoun; e. g. *въ его домъ*, *in his house*; *къ ихъ пользъ*, *to their advantage*. — The genitive singular feminine of this pronoun sometimes takes the inflection of the accusative; e. g. *я её не видѣлъ* (instead of *ей*), *I have not seen her*; *у неё* (instead of *у ней*), *to her*, and this inflection is sometimes contracted: *у ней*.

2. According to the 5th and 6th paradigms (*кто* and *что*) are declined the pronouns compounded from *кто* and *что*; e. g. *никто*, *nobody*; *ничто*, *nothing*; *нѣкто*, *кто нибудь*, *кто либо*, *кто-то*, *somebody*; *нѣчто*, *что нибудь*, *что либо*, *что-то*, *something*; remarking that, if there be a preposition with *никто* and *ничто*, it is placed between the particle *ни* and the pronoun;

е. г. НИ У КОГО́, *to nobody*; НИ КЪ ЧЕМУ́, *to nothing*; НИ ЗА ЧТО, *for nothing*; НИ СЪ КѢМЪ, *with nobody*; and also observing that the parts *нибѹдь*, *ли́бо* and *то* are invariable.

3. According to the 7th paradigm (МОЙ) are declined the pronouns ТВОЙ, *thy*; СВОЙ, *his*, and КОЙ, *who*, observing that this last is not used in the nominative and accusative singular of any of the genders, and that it has the tonic accent in all the cases on the first syllable (КО́его, КО́и, КО́ихъ, &c.). Its compound НѢКІЙ, *some*, is declined in the same manner in the singular; but in the plural it takes the inflections of the adjectives: *N. НѢКІе, f. НѢКІя; G. НѢКИХЪ, D. НѢКИМЪ, &c.*

4. According to the 8th paradigm (НАШЪ) is declined the pronoun ВАШЪ, *your*.

5. According to the 16th paradigm (КАКО́Й) are declined ТАКО́Й, *such*; НѢКАКІЙ, *some*, and ЭТАКІЙ, *such an one*.

6. The other pronouns which have the adjective termination *ый* and *ій* or *ой* (fem. *аь*, neut. *ое*), such as: О́ный, СА́мый, ВСЯ́кій, ДРУГО́й, ИНО́й, КАКОВО́й, ТАКОВО́й, are declined according to the 1st and 2d paradigms of the adjectives (§ 41). The pronouns КАКОВО́й and ТАКОВО́й have also the apocopated termination: *какѡеъ* and *такѡеъ*. In the pronoun ДРУГЪ ДРУ́га, *each other*, which is used for the three genders and both numbers, the first part remains indeclinable, while the second is declined like a substantive; *G. другъ дру́га, D. другъ дру́гу, A. другъ дру́га, I. другъ дру́гомъ, P. другъ о дру́гъ*. The pronouns САМЪ-ДРУ́гъ, *two together*; САМЪ-ТРЕТЕ́й, *three together*, &c., are indeclinable and are used for all the three persons, the three genders and both numbers.

7. The pronoun *всякъ* is used instead of *всякій* *человѣкъ*, but only in the masculine singular. The pronouns *ско́лько*, *стѡ́лько*, *нѣско́лько*, have in the singular, besides this termination which serves both for the nominative and accusative, only the dative in *у* with the preposition *по* (*по ско́льку*, &c.); and in the plural they have only the genitive, the dative, the instrumental and the prepositional cases (*ско́лькихъ*, *ско́лькимъ*, *ско́лькими*, &c.).

8. *Оди́нъ* (parad. 15) is both a numerative and a determinative pronoun. The same is the case with the Slavonic word

единъ (м. едино, ф. одина), which is used in an elevated style, and which is declined in the singular like an adjective of the full termination: *Г. одинаго, единой; Д. единому, &c.*; but in the plural it takes the apocopated form: *едины, единыхъ, единымъ.*

# EXERCISES ON THE PRONOUNS.

I love thee, and thou offendest me. We esteem him, Personal pronouns  
Я люблю ты, а ты обижаешь я. Я уважаемъ онъ,

as to her, we love her sincerely. I have much money,  
а онъ •я любимъ душевно. У (*gen.*) я (*est*) много деньги,

and thou hast not a penny. Protect him, and  
а у (*gen.*) ты нѣтъ ни (*gen.*) копѣйка. Заступись за (*acc.*) онъ, и

depend upon her. Take a seat with me, and come  
понадѣйся на (*acc.*) онъ. Посиди съ (*instr.*) я, и приходи

with him. Tell her, to come to me. Without  
съ (*instr.*) онъ. Скажи онъ, чтоб онъ пришлѣ ко (*dat.*) я. Безъ (*gen.*)

him, without her and without you, life is wearisome to me.  
онъ, безъ онъ и безъ ты, жизнь (*est*) скучный я.

I do not see them, and I will do every thing for them.  
Я не вижу онъ, а я сдѣлаю всё для (*gen.*) онъ.

We esteem you, and you have forgotten us. Depend  
Я уважаемъ ты, а ты забыли я. Будь увѣренъ

on me; I will speak of thee. It is agreeable to me  
во (*prep.*) я; я поговорю о (*prep.*) ты. (*est*) Пріятно я

to be with her. I do not trust myself, and thou art  
быть съ (*instr.*) онъ. Я не доверяю себя, а ты (*est*)

contented with thyself. We take care of ourselves, and they  
довольный (*instr.*) себя. Я бережемъ себя, а онъ

do themselves harm.

себя вредить.



Possessive  
pronouns.

‘My brother, thy sister and his son have studied together.

Мой братъ, твой сестра и онъ сынъ учились вместе.

I try to be agreeable to your master and to our  
Я стараюсь угодить, вашъ учитель *т* и нашъ  
inspector. My house is more beautiful than thine, and  
смотритель *т*. Мой домъ (*есть*) красивый (*ген.*) твой, а  
thy dog is less than mine. I live without them,  
твой собака (*есть*) малый (*ген.*) мой. Я живу безъ (*ген.*) онъ,  
and I can dispense with their help. Do not boast  
и могу обойтись безъ (*ген.*) онъ помощь *ф*. Не хвались (*instr.*)  
of thy labours, and think of thy years. Draw near  
свой трудъ, а подумай о (*prep.*) свой лѣто. Подойди къ (*dat.*)  
my table, and give some money to thy sister. We talk  
мой столъ, и подари (*ген.*) деньги *ф* твой сестра. Я говоримъ  
about our affairs, and you occupy yourself with your lesson.  
о (*prep.*) свой дѣло, а ты занимаетесь (*instr.*) свой урокъ.  
Study is bitter, but its fruits are sweet. Thy gardens  
Учѣніе (*есть*) горькій, но онъ плодъ (*суть*) сладкій. Твой садъ  
are superb; I admire their beauties.  
(*суть*) прекрасный; я удивляюсь онъ (*dat.*) красотѣ.

Demonstra-  
tive pro-  
nouns.

Dost thou see this dog and this cat, these men and  
Видишь ли этотъ собака и этотъ котъ, этотъ люди *т* и  
those trees? In these countries there is no gold; and  
тотъ дѣрево? Въ (*prep.*) этотъ земля нѣтъ (*ген.*) золото; и  
in those no silver. I have heard that from  
въ (*prep.*) тотъ нѣтъ (*ген.*) серебрó. Я слышалъ этотъ отъ (*ген.*)  
your brother, but I do not believe it. I praise your  
вашъ братъ, но я не вѣрю (*dat.*) этотъ. Я хвалю вашъ  
project; it is long since I had foreseen it. Have you  
намѣреніе; давно я предвидѣлъ оный. Живёшь ли  
lived long in this town? I admire this garden,  
ты давно въ (*prep.*) сей городъ? Я удивляюсь (*dat.*) этотъ садъ,

but that is more beautiful. These pens are blunt; these  
 а тотъ (есть) хоро́шій. Э́тотъ перо́ (суть) тупо́й; сей  
 houses are of stone; these streets are narrow. Such eyes  
 домо́у ка́менный; то́тъ у́лица у́зкій. Тако́й гла́зъ  
 are piercing; such actions do not do honour.  
 (суть) прои́цательный; тако́й де́ло не прино́сятъ (ген.) че́сть.

Such are men.  
 Таково́й (суть) люди *т.*

The relative pronouns agree in *gender* and *number* with the substantive to which they belong, and take the *case* required by the following verb, with the exception of the pronoun *чей*, which agrees in gender, number and case with the accompanying substantive. Relative pronouns.

The man whom you see, is very intelligent.

Челове́къ, кото́рый ты ви́дишь, (есть) о́чень у́мный.

The book which you read is very agreeable. I know

Кни́га, кото́рый ты чита́ете, (есть) о́чень при́ятный. Я зна́ю

the affair of which you speak. The water with which

де́ло, о (преп.) кото́рый ты говори́те. Во́да, (instr.) кото́рый

I wash myself, is very cold. Beware of him who

я мою́сь, (есть) о́чень холо́дный. Береги́сь (ген.) то́тъ, кто

flatters thee. He who has much business,

лести́тъ (dat.) ты. То́тъ у (ген.) кто (есть) мно́го (ген.) де́ло,

does not think of pleasures. Learn that which

не ду́маетъ о (преп.) заба́ва. Учи́тесь (dat.) то́тъ, (ген.)

you are ignorant of. Here is cloth like that of which I

что ты не зна́ете. Вотъ (nom.) сукно́ тако́й, како́й я

bought some. Such was the chief, such were the soldiers.

купи́лъ. Каково́й былъ военача́льникъ, таково́й и вои́нъ.

That is the friend, in whose hands is my destiny.

Вотъ (nom.) дру́гъ, въ (преп.) че́й рука́ (есть) мой судьба́.

Listen to those in whose house thou hast lived.

Слу́шайся (ген.) то́тъ, въ (преп.) че́й домо́у ты жи́лъ.

There is a book (*of those*) such as there are few of, and  
 Вотъ книга (*изъ gen. такой*), (*gen.*) какой (*есть*) мало, и

an opportunity like those are rare.

случай каковой (*суть*) рѣдкій.

Interroga-  
 tive pro-  
 nouns.

What o'clock is it, and at what o'clock wilt  
 Который, часъ (*есть*), и въ (*prep.*) который часъ

thou come? With what books dost thou occupy thyself, and  
 придёшь? (*instr.*) Какой книга занимаешься, и

what people live here? Under what chief  
 какой люди *т* живутъ здѣсь? Подъ (*instr.*) который начальникъ

dost thou serve, and what language dost thou learn? Whose  
 ты служишь, и (*dat.*) какой языкъ ты учишься? Чей

are these houses? By whose permission hast thou  
 (*суть*) этотъ домъ? Съ (*gen.*) чей позволеніе ты вышелъ

gone out? I have not seen whose hat has been thrown  
 со двора? Я не видалъ, чей шляпа бросили

to the ground. I do not know with whose children she  
 на (*acc.*) полъ. Я не знаю, съ (*instr.*) чей дѣтя онъ

is walking. About what dost thou trouble thyself, and  
 гуляетъ. О (*prep.*) что ты заботишься, и

in what way have I deserved thy friendship? On what  
 (*instr.*) что я заслужилъ твою дружбу? Съ (*instr.*) что

can one congratulate thee, and from whom hast thou  
 можно поздравить ты, и отъ (*gen.*) кто ты

received this money? How many wersts are there  
 получилъ этотъ деньги? Сколько (*gen.*) верста (*есть*) отъ

from this town to that? Of how many volumes  
 (*gen.*) этотъ городъ до (*gen.*) тотъ? Изъ (*gen.*) сколько томъ

is this work composed? How many roobles  
 сей сочиненіе состоитъ? По (*dat.*) сколько (*gen.*) рубль *т*

will fall to you to each of this profit?  
 достанется ты изъ (*gen.*) этотъ прибыль?

Thou thyself wilt be of my opinion: the sound even of his Determinative pronouns.  
 Ты самъ согласишься съ (*instr.*) я: звукъ самый онъ

voice is agreeable. I take this apartment of the  
 го́лосъ (*est*) пріятный. Я нанимаю сей квартира у (*gen.*)

proprietor himself. Vices themselves find with you an  
 хозяинъ самъ. Порокъ самый находятъ у (*gen.*) ты

excuse. He always speaks of himself. You are  
 извиненіе. Онъ всегда говорить о (*prep.*) себя самъ. Ты (*est*)

discontented with yourselves. We have seen her herself.  
 недовольный (*instr.*) себя самъ. Я видѣли онъ самъ.

Death itself is not frightful. We all content ourselves  
 Смерть *f* самый (*est*) не страшный. Я весь довольствуюсь

with our only salaries. So think women alone. We  
 (*instr.*) одинъ жалованье. Такъ думаютъ женщина одинъ. Я

two will serve God alone. In each assembly  
 оба хотимъ служить (*dat.*) Богъ одинъ. Въ (*prep.*) каждый собраніе

there were citizens of both sexes. They are scattered  
 были гражданъ оба полъ. Онъ (*суть*) разсыяны

in all the world. One must accustom one's self to  
 по (*dat.*) весь свѣтъ. Надобно привыкать къ (*dat.*)

every food.  
 всякій пища.

There is not anybody here; do not ask help of Indefinite  
 Нѣтъ (*gen.*) никто здѣсь; не проси (*gen.*) помощь *f* у (*gen.*) pronouns.

anybody. Thou eatest nothing, and that serves no  
 никто. Ты не ѣшь (*gen.*) ничто, и этотъ не годится къ (*dat.*)

purpose. Learn something, and say that to somebody.  
 ничто. Учись (*dat.*) что нибудь, и скажи этотъ кто нибудь.

I will not sell my house for any thing in the world, and  
 Я не продамъ (*gen.*) свой домъ за (*acc.*) ничто, и

you have sold yours for a mere nothing. Of nothing  
 ты продали свой за ничто. Изъ (*gen.*) ничто

one can make nothing. During the space of some  
 не сдѣлаешь (*gen.*) ничто. Въ (*acc.*) течѣніе нѣсколько  
 months he has bought every day some\*  
 мѣсяцъ онъ покупалъ ежедневно по (*dat.*) нѣсколько (*gen.*)  
 hundreds of peasants.  
 сто • душѣ.

The two sisters speak badly of each other. The  
 Оба сестра говорятъ дурно другъ о (*prep.*) другъ.

Englishmen and the French detest each other. We are  
 Англичанинъ и Французъ ненавидятъ другъ друга. Я  
 going to take a walk with one another. These houses  
 ходимъ гулять другъ съ (*instr.*) другъ. Сей домъ  
 are situated one behind the other. The boards are thrown  
 лежатъ одинъ за (*instr.*) другой. Доска (*суть*) набросаны  
 one with another.  
 одинъ съ (*instr.*) другой.

### THE VERB.

Division of  
 verbs.

47. — The *verbs* (глаголы) of the Russian language are divided, according to their meaning, into four classes, which are called *voices* (залогі), viz:

1. The *active verbs* (дѣйствительные), such as:  
 дѣлать, *to make*; любить, *to love*; мыть, *to wash*;  
 одѣвать, *to clothe*.

2. The *pronominal verbs* (мѣстоименные), formed of active verbs by means of the reflected pronoun *ся*, contracted from *себя*. These verbs are: *a) reflected* (возвратные), as: мыться, *to wash one's self*; одѣваться, *to dress one's self*; *b) reciprocal* (взаимные), as: обниматься, *to embrace each other*; ссориться, *to dispute with each other*; and *c) common* (общіе), which with the termination of reflected

and reciprocal verbs have an active or neuter meaning, as: бояться, *to fear*; смеяться, *to laugh*.

3. The *neuter* verbs (средние), as: спать, *to sleep*; стоять, *to stand*. To this class also belong the *inchoative* (начинательные), as: бѣлѣть, *to whiten, become white*; сохнуть, *to dry, become dry*. Among these verbs two are to be distinguished from the rest; viz: the neuter verb быть, *to be*, and the inchoative стать, *to become*, which help to form and conjugate the other verbs, and which on that account are called *auxiliaries* (вспомогательные).

4. The *passive* verbs (страдательные), as: быть любимымъ, *to be loved*; быть почитаемымъ, *to be venerated*; дѣло сдѣлано, *the thing is accomplished*.

The reflected voice is often used in the passive sense, especially when applied to inanimate objects, e. g. дѣло дѣлается, *the thing is being accomplished*; домъ строится, *the house is being built*.

48. — The principal inflections of the Russian verbs are: *tense* (время), *aspect* (видъ) and *mood* (наклонѣніе), and the secondary inflections are: *person* (лицѣ), *number* (число) and *gender* (родъ). Inflections of the verb.

49. — The *tenses* of the Russian verbs are only three in number: 1) the *present* (настоящее время); 2) the *preterit* (прошедшее), and 3) the *future* (будущее), as: я читаю, *I read*; я читалъ, *I have read*; я буду читать, *I shall read*. Tenses

50. — Though the Russian verbs have only these three tenses, they have other inflections to indicate duration, accomplishment, reiteration, or other circumstances accompanying the action. These shades, or varieties of meaning, to which the Russian grammarians have given the name of *aspects* or Aspects.

*degrees*, are expressed by a change of termination or by means of the prepositions. The prepositions, being joined to verbs, form the *prepositional* (предложные) verbs, while such as have no preposition are termed *simple* (простые) or *a-prepositional*. This division of the verbs has an influence on the number and nature of their aspects. The following are the aspects of the Russian verbs.

1. The *imperfect* aspect (несовершенный видъ), which indicates that the action is being, has been, or will be performed without intimating, whether it is or will be finished; e. g. я дѣлаю, *I make*; я дѣлалъ, *I was occupied to make*; я буду дѣлать, *I shall make*; я просматриваю, *I examine*, я просматривалъ, *I set about examining*; я буду просматривать, *I shall examine*. This aspect is subdivided into definite and indefinite.

a) The *definite* (опредѣлённый) imperfect aspect indicates that the action is performed at a given moment: e. g. птица летитъ, *the bird flies (is flying now)*; заяцъ бѣжитъ, *the hare runs (is running at this moment)*.

b) The *indefinite* (неопредѣлённый) imperfect aspect expresses the action in an indeterminate manner, without reference to the time when it is performed, and also indicates that the acting person is accustomed to perform, or has the power of performing the action: e. g. птицы летаютъ, *the birds fly (have the power of flying)*; зайцы бѣгаютъ, *the hares run (are accustomed to run)*.

The definite and indefinite meaning of the imperfect aspect is not marked by any particular inflection, except in the case of verbs which express movement or change of place. The

other verbs, having properly speaking only the indefinite imperfect aspect, take the definite meaning without changing their termination; e. g. *Васілій тепѣрь пьѣтъ квасъ*, *Basil is now drinking kwass*; *Васілій пьѣтъ и квасъ и воду, что попадѣтся*, *Basil drinks both kwass and water, whichever happens to be there.*

2. The *perfect aspect* (совершенный), which indicates that the action has been, or will be entirely finished; e. g. *я сдѣлалъ*, *I have made, I have finished*, *я сдѣлаю*, *I shall make, I shall finish making*; *я просмотрѣлъ*, *I have entirely examined*; *я просмотрю*, *I shall finish examining*. This aspect is subdivided into aspect of duration and aspect of unity.

a) The perfect aspect of *duration* (длительный) indicates that the action has been, or will be performed by many movements, and has had or will have any duration; e. g. *птицы выклевали ему глаза*, *the birds have put out his eyes with beak-strokes*; *я пропою пѣсню*, *I shall sing over this air.*

b) The perfect aspect of *unity* (однократный) indicates that the action has been, or will be performed only once, and has lasted only a moment; e. g. *я зывнулъ*, *I have yawned, I have made a yawn*; *онъ тронетъ ещё разъ ваше хладное сердце*, *he will once more touch your insensible heart*; *птица выклюнула ему глазъ*, *the bird has put out to him an eye.*

3. The *iterative aspect* (многократный), which indicates that the action has been performed repeatedly, and that it is long passed; e. g. *въ молодыя лѣта я жила въ деревнѣ*, *in my youth I often lived in the country.*



On the subject of these aspects we have to make the following observations:

1. They are never all found in a single verb, as we shall see later. We merely observe in this place that the imperfect, perfect of unity and iterative aspects are found in the simple verbs, while the perfect of duration is met with in the prepositional and some few simple verbs, enumerated further (§ 65. 8). The aspects of a simple verb are generally distinguished in the following manner: the *definite imperfect* aspect is found in verbs signifying movement; e. g. бѣгѹ, *I run (am running now)*; идѹ, *I go (am going at this moment)*; the aspect *perfect of unity* is found in verbs which designate a physical action of men or animals, and ends in нуть (preterit нулъ, future ну); e. g. шагнѹть, *to take a step*; кашлянѹть, *to cough once*; the *iterative* aspect usually ends in ывать or увать (preterit ывалъ or увалъ): e. g. дѣлывалъ, *he usually made*; говаривалъ, *he said at different times*. The other simple verbs, which have not these distinctive characters, are of the *indefinite imperfect* aspect. All these properties of the verbs will be examined subsequently (§§ 59—65).

2. The prepositions are particles which are joined to verbs to communicate to them the meaning of the completion of an action: e. g. дѣлать, *to make*, and сдѣлать, *to finish making, to have made*; писать, *to write*; and написать, *to finish writing, to have written*; and also to give them a particular meaning; e. g. хотѣть, *to go*, and входить, *to go in*; восходить, *to go up*; выходить, *to go out*; доходить, *to go up to, to attain*, &c.

3. The aspects have not all the same number of tenses; the imperfect aspect is used in all the three tenses; the perfect is employed in the preterit and future, while the iterative is met with only in the preterit.

Moods. 51. — The Russian verbs have only three *moods*, viz: 1) the *indicative* (изъявительное наклонѣніе), e. g. я хожѹ, *I walk*; мы гуляли, *we have taken a walk*, вы будете ѹжинать, *you will sup*; 2) the *imperative* (повелительное), e. g. ходи, *walk*; пойдѣмте, *let us go*; гуляйте, *take a walk*; and 3) the

*infinitive* (неокончательное), e. g. ходить, *to walk*; гулять, *to take a walk*; ужинать, *to sup.*—The indicative is the only mood which is found in all the tenses and all the aspects, the infinitive has inflections for the aspects, but has no tenses, as is also the case with the imperative, except that it is not used in the iterative aspect.

The *conditional* (предположительное) and *subjunctive* (сослагательное) moods of other languages are expressed in Russian by the preterit of indicative with the particle *бы*; e. g. я *желалъ бы ѣхать*, *I should wish or I should have wished to depart*; я *бы не думалъ, чтобы вы это сдѣлали*, *I should not have believed that you would have done that.* •

52.—The indicative and imperative of the Russian verbs have further: 1) three inflections for the *persons*, e. g. читаю, *I read*; читаешь, *thou readest*; читаетъ, *he reads*; 2) two for the *numbers*; читаю, *I read*, and читаемъ, *we read*; читаешь, *thou readest*, and читаете, *you read*; читаетъ, *he reads*, and читаютъ, *they read*; читай, *read*, and читайте, *read (you)*; and 3) in the singular of the preterits, three for the *genders*, e. g. ученикъ читалъ, *the school-boy read*; дитя читало, *the child read*; служанка читала, *the maid read*.

The preterit of the Russian verbs is nothing but the past participle, in the apocopated form, joined to the substantive verb, which participle, like the attributive adjectives, was used, in the ecclesiastical Slavonic, in the apocopated termination, and with the three genders, e. g. азъ *есмь сѣтворилъ*, *I have created*; имѣла еси, *thou hast had* (in speaking to a woman). In Russian the auxiliary verb is understood, and we say: я *сотворилъ*, ты *имѣла*, and on this account the genders have become an inflection of the preterits.

There are some verbs which are only used in the third person singular, without expressing the person either by a

noun or a pronoun, and which for that reason are called *impersonal* (безличные). These verbs have only the neuter in the preterit; such are: *нѣтъ*, *there is not* (*pret.* нѣ было, *fut.* не будетъ); *разсвѣтаетъ*, *it begins to dawn* (*pret.* разсвѣло, *fut.* разсвѣтѣтъ); *хочется*, *the mind takes* (*pret.* хотѣлось).

Forms deriv-  
ed from the  
verb

53.—To complete our examination of all the parts of the Russian verbs, we will still add the forms which are derived from them; these are: 1) the *participle* (причастіе), 2) the *gerund* (дѣепричастіе), and 3) the *verbal noun* (отглагольное имя).

1. The *participles*, as parts of the verb, have voice, aspect and tense; and as adjectives, gender, number and case. As regards *voice*, they are active, neuter or pronominal, and passive; they have the same number of *aspects* as the verbs from which they are derived; but they have only two *tenses*, the present and the preterit.

2. The *gerunds* are simply verbal adverbs, which are formed from the active and neuter participles and can take the different aspects of the present and preterit.

3. The *verbal nouns* are abstract nouns which being derived from the infinitive, indicate the particular action, expressed by the aspect, from which they are formed; e. g. бѣганіе, *an habitual running*; разбиваніе, *a defeat*; разбитіе, *a complete defeat* (from the infinitives бѣгать, разбиѣать and разбиѣть).

Conjugation. 54.—The changing of the inflections of the verbs in order to indicate the moods, tenses, numbers, persons and genders, is called *conjugation* (спряженіе); and the verbs are divided, according to the

manner in which they are conjugated, into *regular* (правильные) and *irregular* (неправильные). 1) The *regular* verbs are such as have a polysyllabic infinitive, ending in *mb* preceded by a vowel; e. g. дѣлать, *to make*; гулять, *to take a walk*; имѣть, *to have*; говорить, *to speak*; колоть, *to sting*; тянуть, *to draw*; тереть, *to rub*. 2) The *irregular* verbs are such as have a monosyllabic infinitive, ending either in *mb* preceded by a consonant, or in *чb*, *mb* and *шb*; e. g. бить, *to beat*; брать, *to take*; слыть, *to pass for*; вѣсть, *to conduct*; грызть, *to gnaw*; идти, *to go*; сѣчь, *to cut*.—The following remarks on the conjugation of verbs are important.

1. Each aspect of a verb, having necessarily an infinitive, is conjugated separately, without being mixed up with the other aspects of this verb.

2. The *infinitive* in verbs is the same as the nominative in nouns: this mood is the *direct* form, whence all the others, called the *oblique*, are derived. It ends in *mb* (seldom in *чb*, *mb*, *шb*).

3. The *present*, which is only found in the imperfect aspect (either definite or indefinite), ends, in the first person of the singular, in *ю* or *у* (very rarely in *мз* and *мб*).

4. The *preterit*, which is found in all the aspects, ends in *мз* and sometimes in *з* (neut. *ло*, fem. *ла*; plur. *ли*).

5. The *future* has no particular inflection: in the imperfect aspect (either definite or indefinite) it is formed by the help of the auxiliary verbs *буду* or *стану*, joined to the infinitive; and in the perfect aspect (either of duration or of unity) this tense takes the form of the present.

6. The *imperative*, which is found in all the aspects, excepting the iterative aspect, ends, in the second person singular, in *и* with the accent, or, without accent, in *u* after two or three consonants, in *б* after one consonant and in *ѣ* after a vowel.

## CONJUGATIONS OF REGULAR VERBS,

I. INFINITIVE. :sgoof		FIRST					
PERSONS.	NUMBER	1st branch.	2d branch.	3d branch.	4th branch.	1st branch.	2d branch.
.....	.....	ать	оать еать	ять	ять вть	ить	б
.....	.....			consonant.	vowel.	отъ	м
.....	.....					нть	н
.....	.....						ф
I. PRESENT.		аю	ую юю	яю ю	ѣю	ю	ю
.....	.....	аешь	уешь юешь	яешь ешь	ѣешь	ишь ешь	ишь леши
.....	.....	аегъ	уегъ юегъ	яегъ егъ	ѣегъ	итъ етъ	итъ лети
.....	.....	аемъ	уемъ юемъ	яемъ емъ	ѣемъ	имъ емъ	имъ лемъ
.....	.....	аете	уете юете	яете ете	ѣете	ите ете	ите лете
.....	.....	ають	уютъ юють	яють ютъ	ѣють	атъ ютъ	атъ лють
II. INDICATIVE.							
2. PRETERIT.		м. n. f.	оаь, о, а	оваь еваь	яаь	ѣаь	ѣаь
.....	.....	ааь, о, а	оваь еваь	яаь	ѣаь	ѣаь	ѣаь
3. FUTURE.		буду	стану	стану	стану	стану	стану
.....	.....	будешь	станешь	станешь	станешь	станешь	станешь
.....	.....	будетъ	станетъ	станетъ	станетъ	станетъ	станетъ
.....	.....	будемъ	станемъ	станемъ	станемъ	станемъ	станемъ
.....	.....	будете	станете	станете	станете	станете	станете
.....	.....	будутъ	станутъ	станутъ	станутъ	станутъ	станутъ
III. IMPERATIVE.		ай	уй юй	яй й	ѣй	й	й
.....	.....	айте	уйте юйте	айте ѣте	ѣйте	ите	ите



Regular  
verbs.

\*55.—The *regular* verbs are divided into three *conjugations*, according to the ending of the infinitive and the formation of the first person of the present.

1. The *first* conjugation embraces the verbs ending in the infinitive in *тъ* with one of the vowels *а*, *я* or *ю*, and of which the first person singular of the present is in *ю* with a vowel. This conjugation is subdivided into four *branches*, viz:

1st branch.	2d branch.	3rd branch.	4th branch.
Infinitive: . ать . . . .	о вать . . . .	ять . . . .	еть . . . .
Present: . . аю . . . .	ю . . . .	ю . . . .	ю . . . .

*Examples:* 1) дѣлать, *to make*, дѣлаю; 2) рисовать, *to draw*, рисую; плевать, *to spit*, плюю; 3) гулять, *to take a walk*, гуляю; 4) имѣть, *to have*, имѣю.

2. The *second* conjugation embraces such verbs as end in the infinitive in *тъ* preceded by *и* or *о*, and by other vowels with a changeable consonant, and the first person in the present of which is in *ю* preceded by a consonant (sometimes by a vowel) or, according to the nature of the hissing letters, in *жу*, *чу*, *шу* and *щу*. This conjugation is subdivided into 7 *branches*, in the following order:

1st br.	2d br.	3rd br.	4th br.	5th br.	6th br.	7th br.
и	в ить	ж	и ить	т ить	с ить	и ить
Infinitive: < ѣть	м ѣть	ч ить	л ѣть	т ѣть	с ѣть	ст ѣть
о	п ать	ш ать	з ать	к ать	х ать	ск ать
о	п ать	ш ать	з ать	к ать	х ать	ск ать

*Present:* ю . . лю . . у . . жу . . чу . . шу . . шу.

*Examples:* 1) говорить, *to speak*, говорю; велѣть, *to order*, велю; колѣть, *to sting*, колю; 2) любить, *to love*, люблю; терпѣть,

*to suffer*, терплю; дремать, *to slumber*, дремлю; 3) тужить, *to grieve*, тужу; кричать, *to cry*, кричу; 4) водить, *to lead*, вожу; видеть, *to see*, вижу; мазать, *to anoint*, мажу; 5) платить, *to pay*, плачу; вертеть, *to turn*, верчу; плакать, *to weep*, плачу; 6) просить, *to ask*, прошу; висеть, *to be suspended*, виси; пахать, *to cultivate*, паху; 7) чистить, *to clean*, чищу; хрустеть, *to crack*, хрущу; искать, *to seek*, ищу.

3. The *third* conjugation embraces the verbs ending in the infinitive in *нуть* and in *петь*, the first person of which is in *у* preceded by a palatal consonant (*н, р*). This conjugation is subdivided into 2 *branches*, thus:

	1st branch.	2d branch.
Infinitive: . . . . .	н <sup>^</sup> у <sup>^</sup> ть	е <sup>^</sup> р <sup>^</sup> е <sup>^</sup> ть
Present: . . . . .	ну	ру

Examples: 1) тянуть, *to draw*, тяну; 2) тереть, *to rub*, тру.

The three conjugations of the regular verbs and their various branches, as also the inflections of the moods, tenses and persons, are shown in the preceding table (pages 120 sq.).

56.—In the conjugation of the regular verbs the following rules relating to the formation of the various inflections are to be attended to.

Formation  
of the in-  
flections of  
the verb.

1. The *second* person of the present is formed: a) from the first person in all the verbs of the 1st and IIId conjugation, as also in those of the IIId in *омь*, and in *амь* when not preceded by a hissing consonant, by changing *ю* or *ѣ* into *ешь*; b) from the infinitive in the verbs of the IIId conjugation ending in *уть*, *нть*, and in *амь* preceded by a hissing consonant, by changing *уть*, *нть* or *амь* into *ишь*. The other persons are formed from the second. The present has generally the following inflections:



PERSONS:	SINGULAR.			
	1.	2.	3.	4.
1.	ю . . . . .	у . . . . .	ю . . . . .	у . . . . .
2.	ешь . . . . .	ешь . . . . .	ишь . . . . .	ишь . . . . .
3.	еть . . . . .	еть . . . . .	итъ . . . . .	итъ . . . . .
	PLURAL.			
	1.	2.	3.	4.
1.	емъ . . . . .	емъ . . . . .	имъ . . . . .	имъ . . . . .
2.	ете . . . . .	ете . . . . .	ите . . . . .	ите . . . . .
3.	ютъ . . . . .	утъ . . . . .	ятъ . . . . .	ятъ (атъ)
<p>For verbs of the I conjug. and for those in <i>омъ</i>, 1st br. and in <i>амъ</i>, 2d br. of the II conj. (See the parad. 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, 10 and 12.)</p>				
<p>For verbs of the III conjug. and for those in <i>амъ</i>, 4th, 5th, 6th and 7th br. of the II conjug. (See the paradigms 15, 17, 19, 21, 22, 23, 24 and 25.)</p>				
<p>For verbs of the II conjug. 1st and 2d br. (except those in <i>омъ</i> and in <i>амъ</i>) (See the paradigms 8, 9, and 11.)</p>				
<p>For verbs of the II conjug., 3rd, 4th, 5th, 6th and 7th br. (except those in <i>амъ</i> not preceded by a hissing letter). (See the paradigms 13, 14, 16, 18 and 20.)</p>				

The third person of the plural ends in *амъ* (instead of *амъ*) after the hissing consonant (ж, ч, ш, щ), and this for the verbs of the third branch of the II conjugation. (See paradigm 13).

2. The *preterit* in verbs of the I st and II d conjugation is formed from the infinitive by changing *тъ* into *лъ* (*fem.* *ла*, *neut.* *ло*; *plur.* *ли*). The inchoative verbs of the III d conjugation syncopate the termination *нулъ* into *ъ* (*fem.* *ла*, *neut.* *ло*; *plur.* *ли*), by suppressing the consonant *л* in the masculine, when no vowel immediately precedes; e. g. *сохъ*, *вялъ* (*fem.* *сôхла*, *вôла*, *neut.* *сôхло*, *вôло*), instead of *сôхнулъ*, *вôнулъ*, from *сôхнуть*, *to dry*; *вôнуть*, *to fade*. Occasionally the full form is used: e. g. *мёрзнуть*, *to freeze*, *мёрзнулъ*; but in the inchoative prepositional verbs, the preterit is almost always syncopated, and this sometimes happens also in the aspect perfect of unity; e. g. *замёрзнуть*, *to freeze*, *замёрзъ*, *to erect*, *воздвигъ* (instead of *замёрзнулъ*,

The non-inchoative verbs, as also the perfect aspect of unity, retain the termination *нулъ*; e. g. *тянулъ*, *двинулъ*, from *тянуть*, *to draw*; *двинуть*, *to move once*. The verbs of the 2d branch of the III d conjugation also syncopate the termination of the preterit. (See the paradigms 22, 23, 24 and 25.)

3. The *imperative* ends in the second person of the singular in *и*, *ь*, *и* or *й*, and is formed from the second person of

the present (or from the future, in the perfect aspect of duration or of unity), by changing *есть* or *ишь*:

a) into *ѹ*, if the accent is on the termination of the infinitive (paradigms 8, 10, 11, 12, 15, 16, 18, 19, 21, 22);

б) into *ѵ*, if the accent is not on the termination of the infinitive (paradigms 13, 14, 17 and 24);

с) into *ѹ*, if, without having the accent, the termination of the inf. is preceded by two or three consonants (paradigms 20 & 23);

д) into *ѹ*, if the inflection *есть* or *ишь* of the second person is preceded by a vowel (paradigms 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7 and 9). The verbs in *ишь* preceded by a vowel, and with the accent on the last syllable, also take the inflection *ѹ*, e. g. тайть, *to hide*; поить, *to water*; клейть, *to paste*; imper.: тай, пой, клей.

The second person of the plural is formed by adding the syllable *те* to the inflection of the second person of the singular. The other persons have no peculiar inflection. The first person of the plural takes\* that of the future; e. g. будемъ учиться, *let us study*; пойдёмъ, *let us go*, and sometimes adding the syllable *те*, пойдёмте. The third person in both numbers takes that of the present or the future, preceded by the conjunctions *пусть* or *да*, e. g. пусть говоритъ, *let him speak*; да здравствуетъ, *let him live*; да будутъ, *let them be*.

The second person singular of the imperative is sometimes used with the personal pronouns of the first and third person, in order to express the *conditional* mood; e. g. сдѣлай это я, *if I should do that*; сдѣлай это онъ, *if he were to do that*; instead of *если бы я* (or *онъ*) *это сдѣлалъ*. In the same manner the phrases: сохрани Богъ, *God preserve!* дай Богъ, *God grant!* take the place of the *optative* mood.

*Rem.* There are some regular verbs which deviate slightly from the general rules, undergoing a trifling change either in the 1st person of the pres., or in the imper., as we shall subsequently point out. We remark lastly that there is but one verb which has its imper. in *ѵ*; it is the irregular verb *лечь*, *to lie down*; imper.: лягъ, *pl.* лягте.

57.—Observing these different rules for the formation of the moods, tenses and persons, the active, neuter and pronominal regular Russian verbs are conjugated according to the 25 following paradigms.

Paradigms  
of the con-  
jugations of  
regular  
verbs.

## PARADIGMS OF THE THREE CONJUGATIONS

CONJUGATIONS:	PARADIGMS:	I. INFINITIVE.			II. I N I					
					I. PRESENT.					
					Singular.			Plural.		
					1.	2.	3.	1.	2.	3.
FIRST	1.	1.	дѣлать, to make. . . . .		дѣлаю, дѣла-ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ					
		2.	толковать, to explain. . . .		толкую, толку-ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ					
	2.	3.	воевать, to war . . . . .		воюю, вою-ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ					
		4.	жевать, to chew. . . . .		жую, жу-ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ					
	3.	5.	гулять, to take a walk . . . .		гуляю, гуля-ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ					
		6.	сѣять, to sow. . . . .		сѣю, сѣ-ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ					
	4.	7.	желтѣть, to grow yellow.		желтѣю, желтѣ-ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ					
SECOND	1.	8.	хвалить, to praise. . . . .		хвалю, хвал-ишь, итъ; имъ, ите, ятъ					
		9.	строить, to build. . . . .		строю, стрѣ-ишь, итъ; имъ, ите, ятъ					
	10.	10.	колѣть, to sting. . . . .		колю, колѣ-ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ					
		11.	любить, to love . . . . .		люблю, люб-ишь, итъ; имъ, ите, ятъ					
	2.	12.	дремать, to slumber. . . . .		дремлю, дремл-ишь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ					
	3.	13.	мучить, to torment. . . . .		мучу, муч-ишь, итъ; имъ, ите, ятъ					
		14.	ладить, to tune. . . . .		лажусь, лад-ишь, итъ; имъ, ите, ятъ.					
	4.	15.	вязать, to tie. . . . .		вяжу, вяж-ишь, етъ; етъ, ете, утъ.					
		16.	платить, to pay. . . . .		плачу, плат-ишь, итъ; имъ, ите, ятъ.					
	5.	17.	плакать, to weep. . . . .		плачу, плач-ишь, етъ; емъ, ете, утъ.					
		18.	просить, to ask . . . . .		прошу, прос-ишь, итъ; имъ, ите, ятъ.					
THIRD	1.	22.	тянуть, to draw. . . . .		тяну, тян-ишь, етъ; емъ, ете, утъ.					
		23.	сохнуть, to dry. . . . .		сохну, сохн-ишь, етъ; емъ, ете, утъ.					
		24.	вѣнуть, to fade. . . . .		вѣну, вѣн-ишь, етъ; емъ, ете, утъ.					
	2.	25.	тереть, to rub. . . . .		тру, тр-ишь, етъ; емъ, ете, утъ.					

With respect to the use of the *tonic accent* in the conjugations of regular verbs, the following rules are to be observed.

1. The first person of the present takes the accent of the infinitive, with the exception of the verbs in *овѣтъ* and *есть*, in which the last syllable is accented. These verbs transfer the accent on the penultima, if this termination belongs to a derivative verb; but if the syllable *ов* or *е* belongs to the root of the verb, they preserve the accent on the last syllable; thus *толковать*, *воевать* (parad. 2 and 3) have in the present *толкую*, *воюю*; while *жевать* (parad. 4) has *жую*; and also *ковать*, *to forge*, *кую*; *плевать*, *to spit*, *плюю*. The other persons of the present preserve the accent of the first person, with the exception of several verbs of the IIId and IIIId conjugation, accented on the last syllable, which transfer the accent on the penultima in the second and other persons of the singular and plural. (See the paradigms 8, 10, 11, 12, 15, 16, 18, 19, 21 and 22.)

## GATIONS OF REGULAR VERBS.

## C A T I V E.

## III. IMPERATIVE.

II. PRETERIT.				III. FUTURE.		2d pers.	
Singular.			Plural.			Sing.	Plur.
я, ты, онъ (и онъ, f. она)	<i>masc.</i>	<i>neut.</i>	<i>fem.</i>	ямы, вы, они (f. они)	3 genders.		
	дѣлалъ,	апо,	ала;			дѣлай,	йте.
	толковалъ,	ало,	ала;			толкуй,	ите
	воевалъ,	ало,	ала;			воюй,	ите
	жевалъ,	ало,	ала;			жуй,	ите
	гулялъ,	ало,	ала;			гуляй,	ите
я, ты, онъ (и онъ, f. она)	сѣялъ,	ало,	ала;	ямы, вы, они (f. они)	3 genders.	сѣй,	ите.
	желтелъ,	ало,	ала;			желтѣй,	ите
	хвалѣлъ,	ало,	ала;			хвали,	ите
	строилъ,	ало,	ала;			строй,	ите
	колѣлъ,	ало,	ала;			колѣй,	ите
	любѣлъ,	ало,	ала;			любѣй,	ите
я, ты, онъ (и онъ, f. она)	дремалъ,	ало,	ала;	ямы, вы, они (f. они)	3 genders.	дремли,	ите.
	мучилъ,	ало,	ала;			мучь	ьте.
	ладилъ,	ало,	ала;			ладь,	ьте
	вязалъ,	ало,	ала;			вяжи,	ите
	платѣлъ,	ало,	ала;			платѣй,	ите
	плакалъ,	ало,	ала;			плачь,	ьте
я, ты, онъ (и онъ, f. она)	просѣлъ,	ало,	ала;	ямы, вы, они (f. они)	3 genders.	просѣй,	ите.
	писалъ,	ало,	ала;			пиши,	ите
	чѣстѣлъ,	ало,	ала;			чѣсти,	ите
	искалъ,	ало,	ала;			ищи,	ите
	тянулъ,	ало,	ала;			тяни,	ите.
	сохлъ,	ало,	ала;			сохни,	ите
я, ты, онъ (и онъ, f. она)	вѣлъ,	ало,	ала;	ямы, вы, они (f. они)	3 genders.	вѣнь,	ьте
	терѣлъ,	ало,	ала;			три	ите

бѣлу or стѣну (снѣ, етъ; снѣ, етъ) with the infinitive.

2. The preterit retains the accentuation of the infinitive, and that in all the inflections, excepted *родить*, to bring forth, *pret. родилъ, f. родила, и. родило, pl. родили*, and some verbs of the III conjugation, which, as well as the irregular verbs, follow the rules of adjectives in the apocopated termination, i. e. the accent is often transferred to the last syllable, sometimes only in the feminine gender, and at other times in the neuter and in the plural, as we shall see later.

3. The accentuation of the imperative is above indicated in the formation of this mood.

4. The pronominal verbs preserve the accentuation of the active verbs; however some of these verbs transfer the accent to the reflected pronoun *ся*, as *родилася, he is born, заперся, it shut itself up*; but that happens only in the masculine gender; in the feminine and neuter, as well as in the plural, the accent is placed on the syllable which precedes the pronoun (*родилась, заперлась, &c.*). This transferring happens above all in the monosyllable verbs, as *звася, вѣлся, дѣлся, &c.*

First conjugation.

•According to the 1st paradigm (дѣлать) are conjugated verbs in *амь*, as well simple as prepositional (with the exception of those in *оамь* and *еамь*, which belong to the three following paradigms, and of several in *амь*, which are of the second conjugation). Such are:

Болтать, to shake, *pres.* болтаю.  
Вѣнчать, to crown, вѣнчаю.  
Дерзать, to dare, дерзаю.  
Думать, to think, думаю.  
Ласкать, to caress, ласкаю.  
Пытать, to assay, пытаю.  
Печатать, to print, печатаю.  
Работать, to work, работаю.  
Питать, to nourish, питаю.  
Нюхать, to smell, нюхаю.  
Терзать, to worry, терзаю.  
Умничать, to subtilize, умничаю.  
Ужасать, to terrify, ужасаю.

Уповать, to hope, *pres.* уповаю.  
Обожать, to adore, обожаю.  
Отвѣчать, to answer, отвѣчаю.  
Обыщать, to promise, обещаю.  
Отдѣлывать, to finish, отдѣлываю.  
Усматривать, to perceive, усматриваю.  
Закрывать, to cover, закрываю.  
Надмевать, to render proud, надмеваю.  
Обуревать, to agitate, обуреваю.  
Отмщевать, to avenge, отмщаю.  
Здороваться, to salute, здороваюсь.  
Касаться, to concern, касаюсь.  
Намѣряться, to purpose, -ваюсь.

Also давать, to give, as the prepositional verbs узнавать, to know; доставать, to procure (and with other prepositions) and создавать, to build, which have in the present: даю, узнаю, достаю and создаю, and in the imperative: давай, узнавай, доставай and создавай. — Some prepositional verbs in *ывать*, e. g. показывать, to show; указывать, to indicate; помазывать, to anoint; исповѣдывать, to confess, belong also to the following branch, having the present tense in *ываю* and in *ую*: показываю and показую, помазываю and помазую, &c.

According to the 2nd paradigm (толковать) are conjugated verbs in *оать* (with the exception of *уповать* and *здороваться* which belong to the precedent paradigm), which have in the present *ую*, observing that those in *оать* accented on the last syllable transfer the accent to *у*, if this termination belongs to a derivative verb, but they preserve it on the last syllable, if the syllable *ос* belongs to the root of the verb. Such are:

Ворковать, to coo, *pres.* воркую.  
Торговать, to traffic, торгую.  
Баловать, to cocker, балую.  
Ковать, to forge, кою.  
Сновать, to warp, сную.  
Совать, to shove, сую.

Зимовать, to winter, *pres.* зимую.  
Именовать, to name, именую.  
Цѣловать, to kiss, цѣлую.  
Рисовать, to draw, рисую.  
Образовать, to form, образую.  
Радовать, to rejoice, радую.

Трѣбовать, to require, *pres.* трѣбую. Привѣтствовать, to welcome, *pres.*  
 Чувствовать, to feel, чувствую. привѣтствую.  
 Совѣтовать, to counsel, совѣтую. Повиноваться, to obey, повинуюсь.  
 Милловать, to have pity, милую.

According to the 3d paradigm (воевать) are conjugated verbs in *евать* (with the exception of those in *евать* preceded by a hissing consonant, which belong to the following paradigm, and of *надмевать*, *обуревать*, *отмищевать* and *наимпреваться*, which belong to the first paradigm), which have in the present *юю*, with the same observation relatively to the tonic accent as for verbs in *овать*. Such are:

Горевать, to grieve, *pres.* горюю. Клевать, to peck, *pres.* клюю.  
 Дневать, to pass the day, дняю. Плевать, to spit, плюю.  
 Утренневать, to pass the morning. Блевать, to vomit, блюю.  
 Малевать, to paint, маляю. [-нюю. Пеклевать, to bolt, пеклюю.

According to the 4th paradigm (жевать) are conjugated verbs in *евать* preceded by a hissing consonant (ж, ч, ш, щ), which have in the present *юю* (instead of *юю*); such are:

Врачевать, to cure, *pres.* врачюю. Тушевать, to wash a drawing, *pres.*  
 Кочевать, to nomadize, кочюю. тушюю.  
 Ночевать, to pass the night, ночюю. Хвощевать, to rub with horse-tail,  
 Межевать, to survey, межюю. хвощюю.  
 Бушевать, to howl, бушюю. Пощевать, to regale, пощюю.

This last verb is also written *пощивать*, and then it belongs to the first branch, having in the present: *пощиваю*.

According to the 5th paradigm (гулять) are conjugated all the verbs in *ать* preceded by a consonant, as well simple as prepositional, and also four simple verbs in *ать* preceded by a vowel, and some prepositional verbs in *оать*, in which *ать* is contracted from *ивать*. These verbs have the present in *аю*. Such are:

Валать, to roll, *pres.* валаю. Утолять, to quench, *pres.* утоляю  
 Вонять, to stink, воняю. Извинять, to excuse, извиняю  
 Кашлять, to cough, кашляю. Повѣрять, to verify, повѣряю.  
 Мѣнять, to change, мѣняю. Утомлять, to fatigue, утомляю  
 Козырять, to trump, козыряю. Ваять, to sculpture, ваяю.  
 Кривлять, to contort, кривляю. Злать, to gape, злаю  
 Терять, to lose, теряю. Паять, to solder, паюю.  
 Стрѣлять, to shoot, стрѣляю. Слать, to shine, слаю  
 Являть, to show, являю. Устроить, to arrange, устраюю.  
 Кланяться, to salute, кланяюсь. Удвоить, to double, удваюю.

\*According to the 6th paradigm (**сѣять**) are conjugated verbs in **ять** preceded by a vowel (with the exception of those which belong to the precedent paradigm, and of **стоять** and **бояться**, which belong to the first branch of the II d conjugation). They have the present in **ю**; such are:

Бѣять, to speak, <i>pres.</i> бѣю	Таять, to thaw, <i>pres.</i> таяю
Блѣять, to bleat, блѣю	Чаять, to hope, чаяю
Вопѣять, to cry, вопѣю	Чуять, to hear, чую
Вѣять, to blow, вѣю	Каяться, to do penance, каюсь
Грѣять, to croak, грѣю	Маяться, to languish, маюсь
Лелѣять, to cocker, лелѣю	Смѣяться, to laugh, смѣюсь.

According to the 7th paradigm (**желѣть**) are conjugated the inchoative and some other verbs in **ѣть**, which have the present in **ю**, (the non-inchoative in **ѣть** belong to the various branches of the second conjugation). Such are:

Бѣлѣть, to grow white, <i>pres.</i> бѣлѣю	Рыжѣть, to grow rufous, <i>pres.</i> рыжѣю
Голубѣть, to become azure, голубѣю	Грубѣть, to grow harsh, грубѣю
Соловѣть, to grow light bay, соловѣю	Чернѣть, to grow black, чернѣю
Рябѣть, to become freckled, рябѣю	Погѣть, to sweat, потѣю
Краснѣть, to grow red, краснѣю	Пламенѣть, to flame, пламенѣю
Владѣть, to possess, владѣю	Колѣть, to starve, колѣю
Глазѣть, to gaze, глазѣю	Коснѣть, to linger, коснѣю
Говѣть, to keep fast, говѣю	Печалнѣть, to impress, печалнѣю
Долѣть, to overcome, долѣю	Имѣть, to have, имѣю
Жалѣть, to have pity, жалѣю	Умѣть, to know, умѣю
Синѣть, to grow blue, синѣю	Радѣть, to take care, радѣю
Сѣдѣть, to grow grey, сѣдѣю	Болѣть, to ache, болѣю.

The verb **болѣть** belongs also to the first branch of the II d conjugation, having in the present **болѣю** and **болѣю**, **болѣешь** and **болишь**, &c. — The prepositional verb **выздоровѣть**, to recover (perfect aspect of **выздоровѣливать**), belongs also to the second branch of the II d conjugation, having in the future **выздоровѣю** and **выздоровлю**, but only in the first person, the others being: **выздоровѣешь**, **еть**, &c.

**Second conjugation.** According to the 8th paradigm (**хвалить**) are conjugated verbs in **ить** preceded by a palatal consonant (**л**, **н**, **р**), and also by another consonant, as those, non-inchoative, in **лѣть**, **нѣть**, **рѣть**, observing that several verbs of the second conjugation, accented in the infinitive and in the first person of the present on the last syllable, transfer the accent to the penultima in the second and other persons of the present. Such are:

Бранить, to scold, <i>pres.</i> браню, бранишь.	Коймить, to edge, <i>pres.</i> коймю, -ишь
Веселить, to divert, веселю, веселишь.	Клеймить, to stamp, клеймю, -ишь.
Винить, to accuse, виню, винишь.	Гудить, to fiddle, гудю, гудишь.
Вѣрить, to believe, вѣрю, вѣришь.	Дудить, to pipe, дудю, дудишь.
Говорить, to speak, говорю, говоришь.	Мерзить, to abhor, мерзю, мерзишь
Смолить, to pitch, смолю, смолишь.	Тузить, to cuff, тузю, тузишь.
Дѣлить, to divide, дѣлю, дѣлишь.	Кудесить, to juggle, кудесю, кудесишь.
Скоблить, to scrape, скоблю, скоблишь.	Чудесить, to behave oddly, чудесю, чудесишь.
Дразнить, to provoke, дразню, дразнишь.	Велѣть, to order, велю, велишь
Хоронить, to hide, хороню, хоронишь	Горѣть, to burn, горю, горишь
Курить, to smoke, курю, куришь	Звенѣть, to sound, звеню, звенишь.
Варить, to boil, варю, варишь	Смотрѣть, to look, смотрю, смотришь.

And also *мыслить*, to think, which changes *c* into *ш* in the first person of the present: *мышлю*, *мыслишь*, &c.: *imperative*: *мысли*; and the prepositional verb *изострить*, to sharpen (perfect aspect of *изощрять*), which changes *ст* into *ш* in the first person of the future: *изощрю*, *изостришь*, &c.

According to the 9th paradigm (*стрѣбить*) are conjugated verbs in *ить* preceded by a vowel, as the two simple verbs in *оить*, observing that the verbs in *ить* of this branch, accented on the last syllable, have the imperative in *и*. Such are:

Двойть, to double, <i>pres.</i> двояю; <i>imp.</i> , двой	Стоять, to cost, <i>pres.</i> стою; <i>imp.</i> стой.
Доить, to milk, дою; дой	Своить, to appropriate, свою; свой
Клейть, to glue, клею; клей.	Поконить, to give repose, покою; покой
Поить, to give to drink, пою; пой.	Ройться, to swarm, рою; ройся.
Кроить, to cut, крою; крой	Стайться, to fly in flocks, стаюсь; стайся.
Струить, to pour, струю; струй.	Бойться, to fear, боюсь; бойся.
Тайть, to hide, таю; тай.	Стоять, to stand, стою; стой.

According to the 10th paradigm (*колѣть*) are conjugated verbs in *оть*, as two verbs in *ать*; these are:

Борѣть, to vanquish, <i>pres.</i> борю, борешь.	Порѣть, to rip, <i>pres.</i> порю, порешь
Борѣться, to wrestle, борюсь, борѣшься.	Глаголать, to say, глаголю, глаголюшь
Полѣть, to weed, полю, полешь.	Орѣть, to plough, орю, орешь.

And also *молѣть*, to grind, which has in the present: *мелю*, &c. and in the imperative *мели* (instead of *молю*, *молѣ*, not to be confounded with *молю*, *мѣлишь*,



МОЛѢ, from МОЛѢТЬ, *to pray*). — The verb ОРАТЬ in the sense of *to cry* belongs to the third conjugation.

According to the 11th paradigm (ЛЮБИТЬ) are conjugated verbs in *имѣ* preceded by a labial consonant (б, в, м, п, ф), as the non-inchoatives in-бѣТЬ, мѣТЬ, пѣТЬ, which insert the consonant *л* in the first person of the present (with the exception of клеѣмѣТЬ and коймѣТЬ, which belong to the first branch of the IIId conjugation, of имѣТЬ and ѹмѣТЬ, which belong to the 4th branch of the Ist conjugation, and of шибѣТЬ, which belongs to the first branch of the IIIId conjugation). Such are:

РубѣТЬ, to hew, <i>pres.</i> рублю, рубишь	РѣзвѣТЬся, to sport, <i>pres.</i> рѣзвѣлюсь, рѣзвѣишься
ЗабѣТЬ, to chill, зноблю, знобишь	СкорбѣТЬ, to sorrow, скорблю, рѣишь
ГрубѣТЬ, to be saucy, грублю, грубишь	СвербѣТЬ, to itch, сверблю, свербишь
ЛовѣТЬ, to catch, ловлю, ловишь	ГремѣТЬ, to thunder, гремлю, гремишь
ГотовѣТЬ, to prepare, готовлю, готовишь	ШумѣТЬ, to croak, шумлю, шумишь
ДымѣТЬ, to smoke, дымлю, дымишь	КипѣТЬ, to boil, киплю, кипишь
КормѣТЬ, to nourish, кормлю, кормишь	КорпѣТЬ, to work, корплю, корпишь
ТопѣТЬ, to heat, топлю, топишь	СопѣТЬ, to wheeze, соплю, сопишь
ЛѣпѣТЬ, to mould, лѣплю, лѣпишь	СкрипѣТЬ, to creak, скриплю, скрипишь
ГраѣТЬ, to rule, граблю, грабишь	ТерпѣТЬ, to suffer, терплю, терпишь
ТраѣТЬ, to hit, траплю, трапишь	ХрапѣТЬ, to snore, храплю, храпишь
НравѣТЬся, to please, нравлюсь, нравнись	ХрипѣТЬ, to croak, хриплю, хрипишь
	ШипѣТЬ, to hiss, шиплю, шипишь

And also the prepositional verb ѹмертвѣТЬ, *to put to death* (perfect aspect of ѹмерщвлѣТЬ), which changes *т* into *ш* in the first person of the future: ѹмерщвлѣю, ѹмертвѣишь, &c.

According to the 12th paradigm (ДРЕМАТЬ) are conjugated verbs in *батѣ, матѣ, патѣ*, which insert also the consonant *л* in the first person of the present, and retain it in the other persons as in all the inflections derivated from this first person. These are:

ЗыбѣТЬ, to wave, <i>pres.</i> зыблю, зыблешь.	And thus the following verbs which belong also to the 1st branch of the first conjugation. [зобаю.
КолѣбѣТЬ, to shake, колеблю, колеблешь.	ЗобѣТЬ, to peck up, <i>pres.</i> зоблю and
КлепѣТЬ, to impute, клеплю, клеплешь.	КапѣТЬ, to drop, каплю and капаю.
ТрепѣТЬ, to scutch, треплю, треплешь.	КрапѣТЬ, to dash, краплю and крапаю.
ЩепѣТЬ, to chip, щеплю, щеплешь.	ХромѣТЬ, to be lame, хромлю and хромаю.
ЩипѣТЬ, to pinch, щиплю, щиплешь.	
СыпѣТЬ, to strew, сыплю, сыплешь ( <i>imper.</i> сыпь, instead of сыплѣ).	

And also *имать*, to take, which now is used only with a preposition, as *принимать*, to receive, *pres. приѣмлю* and *принимая*, and with other prepositions.

According to the 13th paradigm (*мучить*) are conjugated verbs in *ить* and *ать* with a hissing consonant (ж, ч, ш, щ), as one verb in *ить* (with the exception of the verbs in *ать*, which belong in the first conjugation). Such are:

<i>Нѣжить</i> , to nurse, <i>pres. нѣжу, нѣ- жишь.</i>	<i>Сушить</i> , to dry, <i>pres. сушу, сүшишь.</i>
<i>Дружить</i> , to make friends, <i>дружѹ, Кѣрчить</i> , to shovel, <i>кѣрчу, кѣрчишь.</i>	<i>Лежать</i> , to lie, <i>лежѹ, лежишь.</i>
<i>Страшить</i> , to frighten, <i>страшѹ, стра- шишь.</i>	<i>Держать</i> , to hold, <i>держѹ, держишь.</i>
<i>Вощить</i> , to wax, <i>вощѹ, вощишь.</i>	<i>Кричать</i> , to cry, <i>кричѹ, кричишь.</i>
<i>Лощить</i> , to gloss, <i>лощѹ, лощишь.</i>	<i>Молчать</i> , to be silent, <i>молчѹ, молчишь.</i>
<i>Служить</i> , to serve, <i>служѹ, служишь.</i>	<i>Стучать</i> , to knock, <i>стучѹ, стучишь.</i>
<i>Лечить</i> , to cure, <i>лечѹ, лечишь.</i>	<i>Пышать</i> , to burn, <i>пышѹ, пышишь.</i>
<i>Учать</i> , to teach, <i>учѹ, учишь.</i>	<i>Дышать</i> , to breathe, <i>дышѹ, дышишь.</i>
	<i>Пищать</i> , to pipe, <i>пищѹ, пищишь.</i>
	<i>Трещать</i> , to burst, <i>трещѹ, трещишь.</i>
	<i>Кшѣть</i> , to swarm, <i>кшѹ, кшишь.</i>

According to the 14th paradigm (*лѣдить*) are conjugated verbs in *ить* and *зуть*, as well as the non-inchoatives in *ѣть* (with the exception of *гудѣть*, *дудѣть*, *мерзѣть*, *тузѣть* and some others, which belong to the first branch of this second conjugation); these verbs change *ѣ* and *з* into *ѣс* in the first person of the present. Some verbs in *ѣть* have retained the Slavonian change of *ѣ* into *ѣсѣ* in the first person of the present. Such are:

<i>Вредѣть</i> , to hurt, <i>pres. врежѹ, вре- дѣшь.</i>	<i>Узѣть</i> , to narrow, <i>pres. ужѹ, ўзѣшь.</i>
<i>Глѣдить</i> , to even, <i>глѣжѹ, глѣдишь.</i>	<i>Морозѣть</i> , to freeze, <i>морѣжѹ, морѣ- зишь.</i>
<i>Щадѣть</i> , to spare, <i>щадѹ, щадѣшь.</i>	<i>Возѣть</i> , to carry, <i>вожѹ, возѣшь.</i>
<i>Родѣть</i> , to bring forth, <i>рожѹ, родишь.</i>	<i>Вѣдѣть</i> , to see, <i>вѣжѹ, (imp. вѣдь and виждѣ).</i>
<i>Лудѣть</i> , to tin, <i>лужѹ, лудишь.</i>	<i>Глядѣть</i> , to look, <i>гляжѹ, глядишь.</i>
<i>Нудѣть</i> , to compel, <i>нужѹ, нудишь.</i>	<i>Сидѣть</i> , to sit, <i>сѣжѹ, сѣдишь.</i>
<i>Будѣть</i> , to waken, <i>бужѹ, будишь.</i>	<i>Смердѣть</i> , to stink, <i>смержѹ, смер- дѣшь.</i>
<i>Водѣть</i> , to lead, <i>вожѹ, водишь.</i>	<i>Убѣдѣть</i> , to persuade, <i>fut. убѣждѹ, убѣдишь.</i>
<i>Сердѣть</i> , to anger, <i>сержѹ, сѣдишь.</i>	<i>Наградѣть</i> , to reward, <i>награждѹ, наградѣшь.</i>
<i>Судѣть</i> , to judge, <i>сужѹ, сүдишь.</i>	<i>Возбудѣть</i> , to excite, <i>возбуждѹ, возбүдишь.</i>
<i>Ходѣть</i> , to go, <i>хожѹ, ходишь.</i>	[упредѣшь.
<i>Грузѣть</i> , to lade, <i>грузѹ, грузѣшь.</i>	<i>Упредѣть</i> , to prevent, <i>упредѹ,</i>
<i>Близѣть</i> , to approach, <i>ближѹ, бли- зѣшь.</i>	
<i>Грозѣть</i> , to menace, <i>грожу, грозѣшь.</i>	
<i>Низѣть</i> , to lower, <i>нижѹ, низѣшь.</i>	

According to the 15th paradigm (вѣзѣть) are conjugated some verbs in *зѣть*, *гѣть* and *дѣть*, which change *з*, *г* and *д* into *ж* for all the persons of the present, as well as for the inflections formed from this tense. These are:

Мѣзѣть, to anoint, *pres.* мажу́, ма-  
жешь.

Рѣзѣть, to cut, рѣжу́, рѣжешь.

Кѣзѣть, to show, кажѣ́у, кажѣ́шь.

Кѣзѣ́ться, to seem, кажѣ́сь, кажѣ́шься

Нѣзѣть, to thread, нѣжѣ́у, нѣжѣ́шь.

Лѣзѣть, to lick, лѣжѣ́у, лѣжѣ́шь.

Брызѣть, to splash, брызжу́, брыз-  
жешь.

Глодѣть, to gnaw, *pres.* гложѣ́у, гло-  
дешь.

And thus the following verbs which  
belong also to the 1st br. of 1st. conjug.

Двѣгѣть, to move, двѣжѣ́у and двѣгаю́.

Тѣгѣ́ться, to be at law, тѣжѣ́сь and  
тягаю́сь.

Стругѣть, to plane, стружѣ́у and  
строгаю́ (instead of *стругаю́*).

According to the 16th paradigm (плѣтъ) are conjugated verbs in *мѣтъ*, as well as the non-inchoatives in *тѣтъ* (with the exception of some verbs in *мѣтъ* which belong to the 20th paradigm), which change *м* into *ч* in the first person of the present. Such are:

Вѣтѣть, to screw, *pres.* вѣчѣ́у, вѣн-  
тишь.

Золотѣть, to gild, золочѣ́у, золотѣ́шь.

Забѣтѣть, to busy, забѣчѣ́у, забѣтишь.

Пѣртѣть, to spoil, пѣрчу́, пѣртишь.

Мутѣть, to muddy, мучѣ́у, мутѣ́шь.

Крутѣть, to twist, кручѣ́у, крутишь.

Мѣтѣть, to aim, мѣчу́, мѣтишь.

Тратѣть, to spend, трачу́, тратишь.

Катѣть, to roll, *pres.* качѣ́у, катишь.

Молотѣть, to thrash, молочѣ́у, молѣ-  
тишь.

Свѣтѣть, to light, свѣчѣ́у, свѣтишь.

Шутѣть, to joke, шучѣ́у, шүтишь.

Колотѣть, to knock, колочѣ́у, колѣтишь.

Вертѣть, to turn, верчѣ́у, вертишь.

Летѣть, to fly, летѣ́у, летишь.

Пыхтѣть, to puff, пыхчѣ́у, пыхтишь.

According to the 17th paradigm (плѣкать) are conjugated several verbs in *мѣтъ* and *кѣтъ*, which change *м* and *к* into *ч* for all the persons of the present, and for the inflections formed from this tense. Such are.

Прѣтѣть, to hide, *pres.* прѣчу́, прѣ-  
чешь [бормѣчешь.

Бормотѣть, to murmur, бормочѣ́у,

Лепетѣть, to chatter, лепечѣ́у, лепѣ-  
чешь.

Топтѣть, to tread town, топчѣ́у, топ-  
чешь. [пѣчешь.

Хлопотѣть, to bustle, хлопочѣ́у, хло-

Хохотѣть, to laugh aloud, хохочѣ́у,  
хохѣчешь.

Шептѣть, to whisper, шепчѣ́у, шѣпчешь.

Щекотѣть, to tickle, щечочѣ́у, кѣчешь.

Кудѣхтѣть, to cackle, *pres.* кудѣхчу́,  
кудѣхчешь.

Клѣкѣть, to call, клѣчу́, клѣчешь.

Скакѣть, to leap, скачѣ́у, скачешь.

Тѣкѣть, to thirst, тѣчу́, тѣчешь.

And thus the following verbs which  
belong also to the 1st branch of  
the first conjugation.

Алѣкѣть, to long, алѣчу́ and алѣкаю́.

Икѣть, to hiccup, ичѣ́у and икѣаю́.

Хнѣкѣть, to sob, хнѣчу́ and хнѣкаю́

Метѣть, to cast, мечѣ́у and метаю́.

According to the 18th paradigm (просить) are conjugated verbs in *суть* (with the exception of *кудѣсуть* and *чудѣсуть* which belong to the first branch of the II d conjugation), and also one non-inchoative in *сѣть*, which change *с* into *ш* in the first person of the present. Such are:

Вѣсѣть, to black, <i>pres.</i> вѣкшу, вѣсишь.	Трусѣть, to be afraid, <i>pres.</i> трушу, трусишь.
Вѣсѣть, to weigh, вѣшу, вѣсишь.	Росѣть, to bedew, рошу, росишь.
Квѣсѣть, to leaven, квѣшу, квѣсишь.	Гасѣть, to put out, гашу, гасишь.
Красѣть, to colour, красу, красишь.	Мѣсѣть, to knead, мѣшу, мѣсишь.
Косѣть, to mow, кошу, косишь.	Носѣть, to bear, ношу, носишь.
Бѣсѣть, to madden, бѣшу, бѣсишь.	Висѣть, to hang, вишу, висишь.

According to the 19th paradigm (писѣть) are conjugated some verbs in *сать* and *хать*, which change *с* and *х* into *ш* for all the persons of the present, as well as for the inflections formed of this tense. These are:

Плясѣть, to dance, <i>pres.</i> пляшѹ, плясѣшь.	And thus the two following verbs which belong also to the 1st branch of the first conjugation.
Поѣсѣть, to gird, поѣшу, поѣсѣшь.	Колыхѣть, to swing, <i>pres.</i> колышу and колыхаю.
Тесѣть, to hew, тешѹ, тесѣшь.	Махѣть, to fan, машѹ, машѣшь and махаю
Чесѣть, to comb, чешѹ, чѣсѣшь.	
Брѣхѣть, to yelp, брѣшѹ, брѣсѣшь.	
Пахѣть, to plough, пашѹ, пасѣшь	

According to the 20th paradigm (чистить) are conjugated verbs in *суть* and the non-inchoatives in *сѣть*, which change *с* into *ш* in the first person of the present. Some verbs in *туть*, which have retained the Slavonian change of *т* into *ш*, belong also to this paradigm. Such are:

Грустѣть, to grieve, <i>pres.</i> грушѹ, грустишь.	Претѣть, to forbid, <i>pres.</i> прешѹ, претишь
Гостѣть, to visit, гошѹ, гостишь	Святѣть, to sanctify, свяшѹ, святишь
Крестѣть, to christen, крешѹ, крѣстишь.	Сытѣть, to satiate, сышѹ, сытишь
Мостѣть, to floor, мошѹ, мостишь	Хятѣть, to ravish, хишѹ, хитишь.
Честѣть, to treat, чешѹ, чѣстишь.	Посвѣтѣть, to visit, <i>fut.</i> посвѣшѹ, посвѣтишь.
Блестѣть, to shine, блешѹ, блестяшь	Укротѣть, to appease, укрощѹ, кротѣишь
Свистѣть, to whistle, свишѹ, свистѣишь.	Сократѣть, to shorten, сокращѹ, сократишь.
Хрустѣть, to cranch, хрушѹ, -стишь.	Просвѣтѣть, to enlighten, просвѣшѹ, просвѣстишь.
Простѣть, to pardon, <i>fut.</i> прошѹ, [простишь]	Возвратѣть, to return, возвращѹ, возвратишь.
Пустѣть, to let go, <i>fut.</i> пушѹ, пу-	
Богатѣть, to enrich, <i>pres.</i> богатѹ, богатѣишь.	

The verbs *простѣть*, *пустѣть*, *посвѣтѣть*\* and following, are the perfect aspects of *проуцѣть*, *пускатѣь*, *посвѣцѣть*, *укроуцѣть*, *сокращѣть*, *просвѣщѣть*, *возвращѣть*; thus the inflections *проуцѣ*, *пусцѣ*, *посвѣцѣ*, *укроуцѣ*, &c., are future tenses.

According to the 21st paradigm (*искать*) are conjugated some verbs in *скать* and *стать*, as well as four verbs in *тать*, which change *ск* and *ст*, or *т*, into *ц*, for all the persons of the present, and for the inflections formed of this tense. These are:

Плескать, to splash, <i>pres.</i> плещѣу, плещѣешь	Скрежетать, to gnash, <i>pres.</i> скрежѣцѣу, скрежѣѣшь
Рыскать, to run, рыцѣу, рыцѣешь	Трепетать, to tremble, трепѣцѣу, трепѣѣшь
Полоскать, to rinse, полощѣу, полощѣешь	And thus the two following verbs which belong also to the 1st branch of the first conjugation.
Свистать, to whistle, свѣцѣу, свѣѣшь	Блестать, shine, блещѣу, блещѣешь and
Хлестать, to lash, хлещѣу, хлещѣешь	блѣстаю
Хвостать, to brush, хвоцѣу, хвоѣшь	Прѣскаать, to sprinkle, прѣщѣу, прѣѣшь
Клеветать, to slander, клевѣцѣу, клевѣѣшь	прыскаю
Роптать, to murmur, ропцѣу, ропѣшь	

Thrd conjugation.

According to the 22d paradigm (*тянуть*) are conjugated verbs in *нуть*, as well as four verbs in *ать* and one in *ѣть*, which have in the present *у*, observing that some of these verbs, accented on the last syllable in the first person of the present, transfer the accent to the penultima in the second and other persons of the present. The perfect aspect of unity belongs also to this paradigm, but the form *ну* of these verbs is a future tense. Such are:

Тонѣть, to sink, <i>pres.</i> тонѣу, тонѣешь	Кѣнуть, to cast, <i>fut.</i> кѣну, кѣнешь
Ряхнѣться, to be crazed, ряхнѣу, ряхнѣешься	Вернѣть, to turn, вернѣу, вернѣешь
Жажѣть, to desire, жажѣу, жажѣешь	Свѣснѣть, to whistle, свѣснѣу, свѣснѣешь
Орѣть, to cry, орѣу, орѣешь	Грѣнѣть, to thunder, грѣнѣу, грѣнѣешь
Сосѣть, to suck, сосѣу, сосѣешь	Глянѣть, to look, глянѣу, глянѣешь
Стонѣть, to groan, стонѣу, стонѣешь	Двѣнѣть, to move, двѣнѣу, двѣнѣешь
Ревѣть, to roar, ревѣу, ревѣешь	Обманѣть, to cheat, обманѣу, обманѣешь

The verb *стонѣть* belongs also to the first branch of the 1st conjugation, having in the present: *стонѣу*, *стонѣешь*, and *стонѣаю*, *стонѣаешь*, &c. The verb *орѣть*, in the sense of *to plough*, belongs to the first branch of the 11d conjugation.

According to the 23d and 24th paradigms (СОХНУТЬ and ВЯНУТЬ) are conjugated the inchoative verbs in *нуть*, which in the preterit syncopate the termination *нуль* in *ъ* if this termination is preceded by a consonant, and in *ль* if it is preceded by a vowel (neut. *ло*, fem. *ла*). Such are:

Блѣкнуть, to fade, <i>pret</i> блѣкъ, <i>кло, кла</i>	Пахнуть, to smell, <i>pres</i> пахъ, <i>хло, хла</i>
Зѣбнуть, to freeze, <i>зѣбъ, бло, бла</i>	Мокнуть, to grow wet, <i>мокъ, кло, кла</i>
Кѣснуть, to turn sour, <i>кѣсъ, сло, сла</i>	Вѣзнуть, to sink in, <i>вѣзъ, зло, зла</i>
Мѣрзнуть, to freeze, <i>мѣрзъ, зло, зла</i>	Гаснуть, to go out, <i>гасъ, сло, сла</i>
Гибнуть, to perish, <i>гибъ, бло, бла</i>	Тѣхнуть, to grow still, <i>тѣхъ, хло, хла</i>
Дохнуть, to die, <i>дохъ, хло, хла</i>	Стынуть, to cool, <i>стылъ, ло, ла</i>

And also the prepositional verb ушибѣть, *to contuse* (and with other prepositions, perfect aspect of *ушибать*), which has in the future ушибу́, ушибёшь, and in the preterit ушибъ, ушибло, ушибла, &c.

According to the 25th paradigm (терѣть) are conjugated verbs in *ереть*, which have in the present *ру*, and which syncopate also the preterit, observing that *мереть* and *переть* transfer in the feminine gender of the preterit the accent to the last syllable. These are:

ъ, to die, *pres* мру, мрёшь; *pret* мёръ, мерла, рло; рли  
 Переть, to press, — пру, прёшь; — перъ, перла, рло, рли.

And also the verb *стерть*, *pres.* стру, стрёшь; *pret.* стёръ, рла, рло, which now is used only with a preposition, as: простёртъ, распростёртъ, *to extend*.

58.—The irregular verbs of the Russian language Irregular verbs are divided into three classes: 1) the monosyllabic verbs in *тъ* preceded by a vowel; 2) some dissyllabic verbs in *тъ*, which in some inflections do not follow the general rules of the conjugation, and 3) the verbs with an irregular termination (in *ать, чь, ти* and *щу*), as is seen in the following table.

Among the monosyllabic verbs there are some which are regular and conjugated according to the paradigms of conjugations. These are:

(See page 142.)

## CONJUGATION OF IRREGULAR VERBS.

I. INFINITIVE.		II. INDICATIVE.				III. IMPERATIVE.				Passive participle.
1. Imperfect (or perfect) aspect.	2. Iterative aspect.	1. PRESENT (or FUTURE).		2. PRETERIT.		2d pers.		Full termination.		
		Singular.	Plural.	Sing.	Plur.	Sing.	Plur.			
I. MONOSYLLABIC VERBS.										
Брѣсть, to shave	брѣвать	брѣю, брѣю		есть, ете, юте	брѣлъ, бѣла, ло; лн	бръй, йте		брѣтый.		
Дуть, to blow	дуть	дую, дую		есть, ете, юте	дуть, ѹла, ѹла, ѹ	дуй, йте		дутьй.		
Ума (обуть), to put shoes	уѣмъ	ую, ую		есть, ете, юте	уѣлъ, ѹла, ѹла, ѹ	уй, йте		уѣтый.		
Пѣть, to sing	пѣвать	пою, пою		есть, ете, юте	пѣлъ, ѹла, ѹла, ѹ	поѣ, йте		пѣтый.		
Вѣть, to howl	—	вѣю, вѣю		есть, ете, юте	вѣлъ, ѹла, ѹла, ѹ	вѣй, йте		—		
Крыть, to cover	крывать	крою, крою		есть, ете, юте	крылъ	крой, йте		крытый.		
Мыть, to wash	мыть	мою, мою		есть, ете, юте	мылъ	мой, йте		мытый.		
Ныть, to grieve	нывать	ною, ною		есть, ете, юте	нылъ	ной, йте		—		
Рыть, to dig	рывать	рою, рою		есть, ете, юте	рылъ	рой, йте		рытый.		
Гнить, to putrefy	гнить	гнию, гни		есть, ете, юте	гнѣлъ, ѹла, ѹла, ѹ	гний, йте		—		
Бѣть, to beat	бѣвать	бѣю, бѣю		есть, ете, юте	бѣлъ, бѣлъ, бѣ	бѣй, йте		бѣтый.		
Шить, to sew	шить	шью, шью		есть, ете, юте	шилъ, билъ, ш	шей, йте		шитый.		
Вить, to twine	вить	вью, вью		есть, ете, юте	вѣлъ, ѹла, ѹла; ѹлн	вей, йте		витый.		
Лить, to pour	лить	лью, ль		есть, ете, юте	лѣлъ, лѣ	лей, йте		литый.		
Пить, to drink	пить	пью, пь		есть, ете, юте	пѣлъ, пѣ	пей, йте		питый.		
Чинить (чинить), to repose	—	чию, чи		есть, ете, юте	чилъ, чилъ, ч	чиѣ, йте		—		
Жить, to live	жить	живу, живу		есть, ете, юте	жилъ, жилъ, ж	живѣй, йте		(вы) житый.		
Плывать, to navigate	плыть	плыву, плыву		есть, ете, юте	плѣлъ, ѹла, ѹла; ѹлн	плывѣй, йте		—		
Славить, to be reputed	славить	славлю, славлю		есть, ете, юте	славѣлъ, ѹла, ѹла	славѣй, йте		—		
Стыть, to grow cold	стыть	стыну, стын		есть, ете, юте	стылѣлъ, ѹла, ѹла; ѹлн	стынь, йте		—		
Знать, to build	звать	знаю, зна		есть, ете, юте	зналъ, зна	знаѣй, йте		знамый.		

## I. MONOSYLLABIC VERBS.

[illegible]

## 2. DISSYLLABIC VERBS.

Ѣзжать, to ride	ѡзъ, ѡдѡшь, . . .	ѡзъ; ѡдѡшь, ѡдѡ, ѡдѡ; ѡдѡ . . .	(поѡзжѡдѡ, ѡдѡ)
Ѣзжать, to run	ѡзъ, ѡдѡшь, . . .	ѡзъ; ѡдѡшь, ѡдѡ, ѡдѡ; ѡдѡ . . .	(поѡзжѡдѡ, ѡдѡ)
Ѣзжать, to will	ѡзъ, ѡдѡшь, . . .	ѡзъ; ѡдѡшь, ѡдѡ, ѡдѡ; ѡдѡ . . .	(поѡзжѡдѡ, ѡдѡ)



I. INFINITIVE.			II. INDICATIVE.			III. IMPERATIVE.			Passive participle.
1. Imperfect (or perfect) aspect.		2. Iterative aspect.	1. Present (or future). Singular.		Plural.	2. Preterit. Singular.		Plural.	
3. VERBS WITH AN IRREGULAR TERMINATION.									
Везѣти, to carry	везу, везъ	вѣзѣть, зѣлѣ, лѣ; лѣ	ѡше, ѡтъ; ѡмѣ, ѡте, ѡтъ	ѡше, ѡтъ; ѡмѣ, ѡте, ѡтъ	вѣзѣть, зѣлѣ, лѣ; лѣ	вѣзѣть, зѣлѣ, лѣ; лѣ	вези, ѡте	везѣнный	
Ползѣти, to crawl	ползу, ползъ	ползѣть, лѣлѣ, лѣ; лѣ	ѡше, ѡтъ; ѡмѣ, ѡте, ѡтъ	ѡше, ѡтъ; ѡмѣ, ѡте, ѡтъ	ползѣть, лѣлѣ, лѣ; лѣ	ползѣть, лѣлѣ, лѣ; лѣ	ползи, ѡте	ползѣнный	
Грызѣти, to gnaw	грызу, грызъ	грызѣть, лѣлѣ, лѣ; лѣ	ѡше, ѡтъ; ѡмѣ, ѡте, ѡтъ	ѡше, ѡтъ; ѡмѣ, ѡте, ѡтъ	грызѣть, лѣлѣ, лѣ; лѣ	грызѣть, лѣлѣ, лѣ; лѣ	грызи, ѡте	грызѣнный	
Лѣзѣти, to climb	лѣзу, лѣзъ	лѣзѣть, лѣлѣ, лѣ; лѣ	ѡше, ѡтъ; ѡмѣ, ѡте, ѡтъ	ѡше, ѡтъ; ѡмѣ, ѡте, ѡтъ	лѣзѣть, лѣлѣ, лѣ; лѣ	лѣзѣть, лѣлѣ, лѣ; лѣ	лѣзи, ѡте	лѣзѣнный	
Вѣсѣти (ошѣсѣти), to open	вѣсѣю, вѣсѣю	вѣсѣть, лѣлѣ, лѣ; лѣ	ѡше, ѡтъ; ѡмѣ, ѡте, ѡтъ	ѡше, ѡтъ; ѡмѣ, ѡте, ѡтъ	вѣсѣть, лѣлѣ, лѣ; лѣ	вѣсѣть, лѣлѣ, лѣ; лѣ	вѣсѣ, ѡте	вѣсѣнный	
Пасѣти, to pasture	пасу, пасъ	пасѣть, лѣлѣ, лѣ; лѣ	ѡше, ѡтъ; ѡмѣ, ѡте, ѡтъ	ѡше, ѡтъ; ѡмѣ, ѡте, ѡтъ	пасѣть, лѣлѣ, лѣ; лѣ	пасѣть, лѣлѣ, лѣ; лѣ	пасѣ, ѡте	пасѣнный	
Трасѣти, to shake	трасу, трасъ	трасѣть, лѣлѣ, лѣ; лѣ	ѡше, ѡтъ; ѡмѣ, ѡте, ѡтъ	ѡше, ѡтъ; ѡмѣ, ѡте, ѡтъ	трасѣть, лѣлѣ, лѣ; лѣ	трасѣть, лѣлѣ, лѣ; лѣ	трасѣ, ѡте	трасѣнный	
Гребѣти or Гребѣти, to row	гребу, гребъ	гребѣть, лѣлѣ, лѣ; лѣ	ѡше, ѡтъ; ѡмѣ, ѡте, ѡтъ	ѡше, ѡтъ; ѡмѣ, ѡте, ѡтъ	гребѣть, лѣлѣ, лѣ; лѣ	гребѣть, лѣлѣ, лѣ; лѣ	гребѣ, ѡте	гребѣнный	
Скребѣти, to scrape	скребу, скребъ	скребѣть, лѣлѣ, лѣ; лѣ	ѡше, ѡтъ; ѡмѣ, ѡте, ѡтъ	ѡше, ѡтъ; ѡмѣ, ѡте, ѡтъ	скребѣть, лѣлѣ, лѣ; лѣ	скребѣть, лѣлѣ, лѣ; лѣ	скреби, ѡте	скребѣнный	
Болѣти, to hurt	болѣю, болѣю	болѣть, лѣлѣ, лѣ; лѣ	ѡше, ѡтъ; ѡмѣ, ѡте, ѡтъ	ѡше, ѡтъ; ѡмѣ, ѡте, ѡтъ	болѣть, лѣлѣ, лѣ; лѣ	болѣть, лѣлѣ, лѣ; лѣ	болѣ, ѡте	болѣнный	
Вѣсѣти, to keep	вѣсѣю, вѣсѣю	вѣсѣть, лѣлѣ, лѣ; лѣ	ѡше, ѡтъ; ѡмѣ, ѡте, ѡтъ	ѡше, ѡтъ; ѡмѣ, ѡте, ѡтъ	вѣсѣть, лѣлѣ, лѣ; лѣ	вѣсѣть, лѣлѣ, лѣ; лѣ	вѣсѣ, ѡте	вѣсѣнный	
Вѣсѣти, to ramble	вѣсѣю, вѣсѣю	вѣсѣть, лѣлѣ, лѣ; лѣ	ѡше, ѡтъ; ѡмѣ, ѡте, ѡтъ	ѡше, ѡтъ; ѡмѣ, ѡте, ѡтъ	вѣсѣть, лѣлѣ, лѣ; лѣ	вѣсѣть, лѣлѣ, лѣ; лѣ	вѣсѣ, ѡте	вѣсѣнный	
Вѣсѣти, to lead	вѣсѣю, вѣсѣю	вѣсѣть, лѣлѣ, лѣ; лѣ	ѡше, ѡтъ; ѡмѣ, ѡте, ѡтъ	ѡше, ѡтъ; ѡмѣ, ѡте, ѡтъ	вѣсѣть, лѣлѣ, лѣ; лѣ	вѣсѣть, лѣлѣ, лѣ; лѣ	вѣсѣ, ѡте	вѣсѣнный	
Кладѣти, to lay	кладу, кладъ	кладѣть, лѣлѣ, лѣ; лѣ	ѡше, ѡтъ; ѡмѣ, ѡте, ѡтъ	ѡше, ѡтъ; ѡмѣ, ѡте, ѡтъ	кладѣть, лѣлѣ, лѣ; лѣ	кладѣть, лѣлѣ, лѣ; лѣ	клади, ѡте	кладѣнный	
Плѣсти, perf. asp. to fall	плѣчу, плѣчъ	плѣсти, лѣлѣ, лѣ; лѣ	ѡше, ѡтъ; ѡмѣ, ѡте, ѡтъ	ѡше, ѡтъ; ѡмѣ, ѡте, ѡтъ	плѣсти, лѣлѣ, лѣ; лѣ	плѣсти, лѣлѣ, лѣ; лѣ	плѣди, ѡте	плѣщенный	
Плѣсти, to spin	плѣчу, плѣчъ	плѣсти, лѣлѣ, лѣ; лѣ	ѡше, ѡтъ; ѡмѣ, ѡте, ѡтъ	ѡше, ѡтъ; ѡмѣ, ѡте, ѡтъ	плѣсти, лѣлѣ, лѣ; лѣ	плѣсти, лѣлѣ, лѣ; лѣ	плѣди, ѡте	плѣщенный	
Грѣсти, to go	грѣчу, грѣчъ	грѣсти, лѣлѣ, лѣ; лѣ	ѡше, ѡтъ; ѡмѣ, ѡте, ѡтъ	ѡше, ѡтъ; ѡмѣ, ѡте, ѡтъ	грѣсти, лѣлѣ, лѣ; лѣ	грѣсти, лѣлѣ, лѣ; лѣ	грѣди, ѡте	грѣщенный	
Крѣсти, to steal	крѣчу, крѣчъ	крѣсти, лѣлѣ, лѣ; лѣ	ѡше, ѡтъ; ѡмѣ, ѡте, ѡтъ	ѡше, ѡтъ; ѡмѣ, ѡте, ѡтъ	крѣсти, лѣлѣ, лѣ; лѣ	крѣсти, лѣлѣ, лѣ; лѣ	крѣди, ѡте	крѣщенный	
Сѣсти, perf. asp. to sit	сѣчу, сѣчъ	сѣсти, лѣлѣ, лѣ; лѣ	ѡше, ѡтъ; ѡмѣ, ѡте, ѡтъ	ѡше, ѡтъ; ѡмѣ, ѡте, ѡтъ	сѣсти, лѣлѣ, лѣ; лѣ	сѣсти, лѣлѣ, лѣ; лѣ	сѣди, ѡте	сѣщенный	
Мѣсти, to perturb	мѣчу, мѣчъ	мѣсти, лѣлѣ, лѣ; лѣ	ѡше, ѡтъ; ѡмѣ, ѡте, ѡтъ	ѡше, ѡтъ; ѡмѣ, ѡте, ѡтъ	мѣсти, лѣлѣ, лѣ; лѣ	мѣсти, лѣлѣ, лѣ; лѣ	мѣди, ѡте	мѣщенный	
Мѣсти, to sweep	мѣчу, мѣчъ	мѣсти, лѣлѣ, лѣ; лѣ	ѡше, ѡтъ; ѡмѣ, ѡте, ѡтъ	ѡше, ѡтъ; ѡмѣ, ѡте, ѡтъ	мѣсти, лѣлѣ, лѣ; лѣ	мѣсти, лѣлѣ, лѣ; лѣ	мѣди, ѡте	мѣщенный	
Плѣсти, to press	плѣчу, плѣчъ	плѣсти, лѣлѣ, лѣ; лѣ	ѡше, ѡтъ; ѡмѣ, ѡте, ѡтъ	ѡше, ѡтъ; ѡмѣ, ѡте, ѡтъ	плѣсти, лѣлѣ, лѣ; лѣ	плѣсти, лѣлѣ, лѣ; лѣ	плѣди, ѡте	плѣщенный	
Плѣсти, to plait	плѣчу, плѣчъ	плѣсти, лѣлѣ, лѣ; лѣ	ѡше, ѡтъ; ѡмѣ, ѡте, ѡтъ	ѡше, ѡтъ; ѡмѣ, ѡте, ѡтъ	плѣсти, лѣлѣ, лѣ; лѣ	плѣсти, лѣлѣ, лѣ; лѣ	плѣди, ѡте	плѣщенный	
Цвѣсти, to flower	цвѣчу, цвѣчъ	цвѣсти, лѣлѣ, лѣ; лѣ	ѡше, ѡтъ; ѡмѣ, ѡте, ѡтъ	ѡше, ѡтъ; ѡмѣ, ѡте, ѡтъ	цвѣсти, лѣлѣ, лѣ; лѣ	цвѣсти, лѣлѣ, лѣ; лѣ	цвѣди, ѡте	цвѣщенный	
Рассѣсти (обѣсѣсти), to find out	рассѣчу, рассѣчъ	рассѣсти, лѣлѣ, лѣ; лѣ	ѡше, ѡтъ; ѡмѣ, ѡте, ѡтъ	ѡше, ѡтъ; ѡмѣ, ѡте, ѡтъ	рассѣсти, лѣлѣ, лѣ; лѣ	рассѣсти, лѣлѣ, лѣ; лѣ	рассѣди, ѡте	рассѣщенный	
Чисѣти (сѣсѣти), to count	чисѣю, чисѣю	чисѣть, лѣлѣ, лѣ; лѣ	ѡше, ѡтъ; ѡмѣ, ѡте, ѡтъ	ѡше, ѡтъ; ѡмѣ, ѡте, ѡтъ	чисѣть, лѣлѣ, лѣ; лѣ	чисѣть, лѣлѣ, лѣ; лѣ	числи, ѡте	числистый	



Знать, to know, I 1, <i>pres</i> знаю, знаешь	Тмать, to darken, II 1, <i>pres</i> тмю
Пхать, to push, — пхаю	Бдѣть, to wake, — бдю
Чкать, to clash, — чкаяю, чкаю	Зрѣть, to see, — зрю
Грѣть, to warm, I 4, <i>pres</i> грю, грѣишь	Мжнѣть, to twinkle, II 3 <i>pres</i> мжу, мжнишь
Зрѣть, to ripen, — зрю	Мшнѣть, to cover with moss, — мшу
Млѣть, to be stupified, — млѣю	Тщнѣть, to endeavour, — тщу
Прѣть, to stew, — прю	Мчатъ, to hurry, — мчу
Рдѣть, to redden, — рдѣю	Нзѣть (pronзѣть), to pierce, II 4, <i>pres</i> -нжу, нзнишь
Смѣть, to dare, — смѣю	Льстѣть, to flatter, II 7, <i>pres</i> льщу, льстишь
Спѣть, to ripen, — спѣю	Мстѣть, to avenge, — мщу, мстишь
Тлѣть, to rot, — тлѣю	Гнѣть, to bend, III 1 <i>pres</i> гну, гнешь
Длѣть, to prolong, II 1, <i>pres</i> длю, длѣишь	Льнушь, to stick, — льну
Дмѣть, to swell, — дмю	Мзгнѣть, to turn sour, — мзгну
Злѣть, to irritate, — злѣю	Мкнѣть, to shut, — мкну
Мнѣть, to think, — мню	Снѣть, to fall asleep, — сну
Снѣть, to dream, <i>impers</i> снѣтся	
Тлѣть, to corrupt, — тлю, тлишь	

The preceding table of irregular verbs gives also the *iterative aspect* and the *passive participle*, inflections which in these verbs do not follow always the general rules of the formation

Delineation  
of verbs.

59.—The property of the Russian verbs to have more or less aspects, is named their *delineation* (начертаніе), and depends as well upon their exterior form as upon their meaning. With this relation the verbs, as is above mentioned (§ 50), are *simple* (простые) or *prepositional* (предложные).

1. The *simple* verbs, which are without a preposition, can be *complete* (полные), *double* (сугубые), *incomplete* (неполные) and *defective* (недостаточные). The *complete* simple verbs are those which designate a physical action of men or animals, as кидать, to throw, плевать, to spit. The *double* simple verbs are those which express the movement of an acting object, as идти and ходить, to go, нести and носить, to bring. The *incomplete* and *defective* simple verbs are those which are not included in

the two preceding subdivisions, as *дѣлать*, to make; *имѣть*, to have.

2. The *prepositional* verbs, which are formed with any preposition, are subdivided, relatively to their delineation, according as they are derivated from the incomplete, defective, complete or double simple verbs.—In general the delineation of the Russian verbs, as well simple as prepositional, is seen in the following table.

DELINEATION OF VERBS.

I. SIMPLE VERBS.	II. PREPOSITIONAL VERBS.
1. The <i>incomplete</i> simple verbs have 2 aspects	1. Formed from the <i>incomplete</i> simple verbs, the prepositional verbs have 2 aspects
<div style="display: flex; justify-content: space-around;"> <div>1) <i>imperfect.</i> <i>дѣлать.</i></div> <div>2) <i>iterative.</i> <i>дѣлывать</i></div> </div>	<div style="display: flex; justify-content: space-around;"> <div>1) <i>imperfect.</i> <i>обдѣлывать.</i></div> <div>2) <i>perfect of duration.</i> <i>обдѣлать</i></div> </div>
3. The <i>defective</i> simple verbs have only the <i>imperfect</i> aspect	2. Formed from the <i>defective</i> simple verbs, they have only the aspect <i>perfect of duration</i>
<i>имѣть</i>	<i>возимѣть</i>
3. The <i>complete</i> simple verbs have the 3 aspects	3. Formed from the <i>complete</i> simple verbs, they have the 3 aspects
<div style="display: flex; justify-content: space-around;"> <div>1) <i>imperfect.</i> <i>кидать</i></div> <div>2) <i>iterative.</i> <i>кидывать</i></div> <div>3) <i>perf. of unity</i> <i>кинуть</i></div> </div>	<div style="display: flex; justify-content: space-around;"> <div>1) <i>imperfect.</i> <i>закидывать</i></div> <div>2) <i>perf. of durat.</i> <i>закидать</i></div> <div>3) <i>perf. of unity</i> <i>закинуть.</i></div> </div>
4. The <i>double</i> simple verbs are two verbs which have together 3 aspects	4. Formed from the <i>double</i> simple verbs, there are two various verbs, each with 2 aspects a) from the <i>definite</i> verb    b) from the <i>indefinite</i> verb.
<div style="display: flex; justify-content: space-around;"> <div>1) <i>definite imp.</i> <i>нести.</i></div> <div>2) <i>indefin imp</i> <i>носить</i></div> <div>3) <i>iterative.</i> <i>нашивать.</i></div> </div>	<div style="display: flex; justify-content: space-around;"> <div>1) <i>imperf.</i> <i>выносить</i></div> <div>2) <i>perfect.</i> <i>вынести</i></div> <div>1) <i>imperf.</i> <i>вынашивать</i></div> <div>2) <i>perfect.</i> <i>выносить.</i></div> </div>

60.—The *incomplete* simple verbs are those which <sup>Simple verbs.</sup> do not designate a physical action properly so called, neither a movement of a place to another. These verbs have two aspects: 1) the *imperfect* aspect, and 2) the *iterative* aspect. The first, which is the radical form of the verb, ends in *тъ*, *чь*, *ти* or *щу*, and the latter in *ывать*, *ивать*, *вать* or

*ать*, and is formed from the imperfect aspect, as is seen in the following examples.

In the formation of the iterative aspect the tonic accent is placed on the termination *ать* and *ать*, whilst in *ивать* and *увать* it is placed on the antepenultima, and if in this syllable is an *о*, this vowel is changed into *ѣ*. We must yet observe that the iterative aspect is seldom used in the infinitive, and it has in general only the preterit tense; e. g. не *пи́салъ* тебѣ *вина́*, *you ought not to drink wine*; онъ *възносѣлъ* *верхомъ*, *he rid often*; but this inflection is necessary to form the prepositional verbs. The table of irregular verbs, above shown (§ 58), gives also the iterative aspect, which in these verbs presents some irregularities.

1) <i>Imperfect aspect.</i>	2) <i>Iterative asp.</i>
Гадать, to guess, I, c. . . . .	га́дывать.
Думать, to think, — . . . . .	ду́мывать.
Дѣлать, to make, — . . . . .	дѣ́лывать.
Играть, to play, — . . . . .	игры́вать.
Кутать, to wrap, — . . . . .	ку́тывать.
Мотать, to wind, — . . . . .	ма́тывать.
Работать, to work, — . . . . .	раба́тывать.
Щупать, to sound, — . . . . .	щупы́вать.
Знать, to know, — . . . . .	знава́ть.
Ковать, to forge, I. 2. . . . .	ко́вывать.
Рисовать, to draw, — . . . . .	рисо́вывать.
Советовать, to counsel, — . . . . .	советы́вать.
Воевать, to war, — . . . . .	воёвы́вать.
Дневать, to pass the day, — . . . . .	днєвы́вать.
Ночевать, to pass the night, — . . . . .	ночѣвы́вать.
Гулять, to take a walk, I. 3. . . . .	гу́ливать.
Равнять, to equal, — . . . . .	равни́вать.
Смѣяться, to laugh, — . . . . .	смѣи́ваться.
Вѣять, to blow, — . . . . .	вѣва́ть.
Сѣять, to sow, — . . . . .	сѣва́ть.
Слабѣть, to grow weak, I. 4. . . . .	слабѣ́вать.
Грѣть, to warm, — . . . . .	грѣва́ть.
Говѣть, to keep fast, — . . . . .	га́вливать.

1) *Imperfect aspect.*2) *Iterative asp.* °

Бранить, to scold, II, 1. . . . .	бранивать.
Палить, to fire, — . . . . .	паливать.
Молить, to pray, — . . . . .	маливать.
Спорить, to contend, — . . . . .	спаривать,
Дарить, to give, — . . . . .	даривать.
Дразнить, to provoke, — . . . . .	дражнить.
Болеть, to ache, — . . . . .	баливать.
Смотреть, to look, — . . . . .	сматривать.
Гореть, to burn, — . . . . .	гарать.
Велеть, to order, — . . . . .	вельвать.
Зреть, to see, — . . . . .	зирать.
Пойть, to give to drink, . . . . .	паивать.
Клеить, to glue, — . . . . .	клеивать.
Бояться, to fear, — . . . . .	баиваться.
Пороть, to rip, — . . . . .	парывать.
Молоть, to grind, — . . . . .	малывать.
Любить, to love, II. 2. . . . .	любливать.
Ловить, to catch, — . . . . .	лавливать.
Рубить, to hew, — . . . . .	рубать.
Кормить, to nourish, — . . . . .	кармливать.
Топить, to heat, — . . . . .	тапливать.
Терпеть, to suffer, — . . . . .	терпиво.
Кипеть, to boil, — . . . . .	кипать.
Дремать, to slumber, — . . . . .	дремливать.
Сыпать, to strew, — . . . . .	сыпать.
Хромать, to be lame, — . . . . .	храмывать.
Лечить, to cure, II. 3. . . . .	лечивать.
Служить, to serve, — . . . . .	служивать.
Тушить, to put out, — . . . . .	тушить.
Морщить, to wrinkle, — . . . . .	маришчить.
Держать, to keep, — . . . . .	держивать.
Молчать, to be silent, — . . . . .	малчи́вать.
Дышать, to breathe, — . . . . .	дыхать.
Гладить, to even, II. 4. . . . .	глаживать.
Городить, to enclose, — . . . . .	гораживать.
Судить, to judge, — . . . . .	суживать.
Грузить, to lade, — . . . . .	груживать.

1) *Imperfect aspect.*2) *Iterative asp.*

Сидѣть, to sit, II. 4. . . . .	сѣживатьъ.
Вязать, to tie, — . . . . .	вязывать.
Платить, to pay, II. 5. . . . .	плачивать.
Колотить, to knock, — . . . . .	колачивать.
Молотить, to thrash, — . . . . .	молочивать.
Плакать, to weep, — . . . . .	плакивать.
Вѣсить, to weigh, II. 6. . . . .	вѣшивать.
Просить, to ask, — . . . . .	прашивать.
Гасить, to extinguish, — . . . . .	гашивать.
Писать, to write, — . . . . .	писывать.
Плясать, to dance, — . . . . .	плясывать.
Пахать, to plough, — . . . . .	пахивать.
Гостить, to visit, II. 7. . . . .	гашивать.
Мостить, to floor, — . . . . .	машивать.
Снастить, to rig, — . . . . .	снашивать.
Искать, to seek, — . . . . .	искивать.
Топнуть, to sink, III. 1. . . . .	топать.
Тянуть, to draw, — . . . . .	тягивать.
Вяннуть, to fade, — . . . . .	вядать.
Сохнуть, to dry, — . . . . .	сыхать.
Пахнуть, to smell, — . . . . .	пахивать.
Гнуть, to bend, — . . . . .	гибать.
Мкнуть, to shut, — . . . . .	мыкать.
Сосать, to suck, — . . . . .	сасывать.
Переть, to press, III. 2. . . . .	пирать.
Тереть, to rub, — . . . . .	тирять.

61.—The *defective* simple verbs are those which have only the *indefinite imperfect* aspect, such are the following verbs:

Адѣть, to grow ruby. I. 4.	Желать, to wish, I. 1.
Бѣдствовать, to be in misery, I. 2.	Имѣть, to have, I. 4.
Винить, to accuse, II. 1.	Карать, to punish, I. 1.
to govern, I. 4.	Льстить, to flatter, II. 7.
to hurt, II. 4.	Мечтать, to imagine, I. 1.
to be proud, II. 4.	Мирить, to pacify, II. 1.
to have pity, I. 4.	Мудрить, to subtilize, II. 1.

Мягчить, to mollify, II. 3.	Творить, to create, II. 1.
Побдничать, to lunch, I. 1.	Терять, to lose, I. 3.
Радеть, to take care, I. 4.	Торопить, to hurry, II. 2.
Растить, to let grow, II. 7.	Умничать, to refine, I. 1.
Роптать, to murmur, II. 7.	Умѣть, to know, I. 4.
Рыдать, to sob, I. 1.	Хитрить, to be artful, II. 1.
Святить, to sanctify, II. 7.	Хранить, to preserve, II. 1.
Спѣшить, to hasten, II. 3.	Хотѣть, to will, <i>irr.</i>
Стараться, to endeavour, I. 1.	Щадить, to spare, II. 4.

The defective verbs differ from the incomplete verbs in as much as they have not the iterative aspect, which in general is used only in verbs designating an ordinary, non intellectual action, and it is not found in poetry neither in an elevated style.

62.—The *complete* simple verbs are those which designate ordinarily a physical action of men or animals, or, speaking more correctly, a visible or audible action. These verbs have the three aspects: 1) the *imperfect*, 2) the *iterative*, and 3) the *perfect of unity*. The two first aspects have all the properties of those of incomplete verbs; but the perfect aspect of unity ends in *нуть*, and is formed putting this termination in the place of that of the imperfect aspect, sometimes with a little change of the vowel, and sometimes with the elision of the preceding consonant, as is seen in the following examples.

1) <i>Imperfect aspect.</i>	2) <i>Iterative aspect.</i>	3) <i>Perf. asp. of unity.</i>
А'хать, to sigh, I. 1. . .	áхивать. . . . .	áхнуть, III. 1.
Блístать, to shine, — . . .	— . . . . .	блестнѣть, —
Болтáть, to shake, — . . .	бáлтывать. . . . .	болтнѣть, —
Глотáть, to swallow, — . . .	глáтывать. . . . .	глонѣть, —
Двигáть, to move, I. 1. and		
II. 4. . . . .	двигивать and двигáть.	двинуть, —
Дерзáть, to dare, I. 1. . .	— . . . . .	дерзнѣть, —



- 1) *Imperfect aspect.*      2) *Iterative aspect.*      3) *Perf. asp. of unity.*

Зѣвѣть, to yawn, I. 1.	зѣвывать . . . . .	зѣвнѣть, III, 1.
Касѣться, to touch, — .	— . . . . .	коснѣться, —
Квѣкать, to quack, — .	квѣкивать . . . . .	квѣкнѣть, —
Кивѣть, to give a nod, —	— . . . . .	кивнѣть, —
Кидѣть, to cast, — . .	кидывать . . . . .	кинуть, —
Лопѣть, to burst, — . .	лопывать . . . . .	лопнѣть, —
Нюхѣть, to smell, — . .	нюхивать . . . . .	нюхнѣть, —
Порхѣть, to flutter, — .	пѣрхивать . . . . .	порхнѣть, —
Прыгѣть, to jump, — .	прыгивать . . . . .	прыгнѣть, —
Прѣдѣть, to bound, — .	прѣдывать . . . . .	прѣнѣть, —
Сверкѣть, to flash, — .	свѣркивать . . . . .	сверкнѣть, —
Толкѣть, to push, — . .	талкивать . . . . .	толкнѣть, —
Трогѣть, to touch, — .	трогивать . . . . .	тронѣть, —
Хѣркать, to spit, — . .	хѣркивать . . . . .	хѣркнѣть, —
Хлопѣть, to clap, — . .	хлопывать . . . . .	хлопнѣть, —
Совѣть, to shove, I. 2.	совывать . . . . .	сунѣть, —
Клевѣть, to peck, — . .	клевывать . . . . .	клюнѣть, —
Плевѣть, to spit, — . .	плѣвывать . . . . .	плюнѣть, —
Жевѣть, to chew, — . .	жѣвывать . . . . .	жевнѣть, —
Кашлять, to cough, I. 3.	кашливать . . . . .	кашлянѣть, —
Нырѣть, to dive, — . .	ныривать . . . . .	нырнѣть, —
Стрѣлять, to shoot, — .	стрѣливать . . . . .	стрѣльнѣть, —
Швырѣть, to sling, — .	швыривать . . . . .	швырнѣть, —
Рѣять, to throw, — . .	— . . . . .	ринѣть, —
Скользѣть, to slip, II. 1.	скальзывать . . . . .	скользнѣть, —
Шевелѣть, to stir, — . .	шевеливать . . . . .	шевелѣнѣть, —
Колѣть, to sting, — . .	калывать . . . . .	кольнѣть, —
Давѣть, to press, II. 2.	давливать . . . . .	давнѣть, —
Рубѣть, to hew, — . . .	рубѣть . . . . .	рубнѣть, —
Гремѣть, to thunder, — .	— . . . . .	грѣнѣть, —
Храпѣть, to snore, — .	храпывать . . . . .	храпнѣть, —
Трепѣть, to brake, — .	трѣпливать . . . . .	трепнѣть, —
Щипѣть, to pinch, — .	щипывать . . . . .	щипнѣть, —
Ворошить, to rummage, II. 3.	ворѣшивать . . . . .	ворохнѣть, —
Плющѣть, to flatten, — .	плющивать . . . . .	плюснѣть, —
Вязѣть, to squeak, — .	вязгивать . . . . .	вязгнѣть, —
Дрожѣть, to tremble, —	дрѣгивать . . . . .	дрогнѣть, —

1) *imperfect aspect.*2) *Iterative aspect.*3) *Perf. asp. of unity.*

Крича́ть, to cry, II. 3.	крики́вать.	крикну́ть, III. 1.
Пы́жать, to burn, —	пы́живать.	пы́хнуть, —
Тре́щать, to burst, —	тре́скивать.	тре́снуть, —
Гля́деть, to look, II. 4.	гля́дивать.	гляну́ть, —
Бры́згать, to splash, —	бры́згивать.	бры́знуть, —
Лиза́ть, to lick, —	лизыва́ть.	лизну́ть, —
Ма́зать, to anoint, —	ма́зывать.	мазну́ть, —
Верти́ть, to turn, II. 5.	вёрты́вать or вёрчи́вать.	верну́ть, —
Скака́ть, to leap, —	ска́кивать.	скокну́ть, —
Клика́ть, to call, —	клика́ть.	кликну́ть, —
Шепта́ть, to whisper, —	шепты́вать.	шепну́ть, —
Труси́ть, to sprinkle, II. 6.	—	тру́хну́ть, —
Колыха́ть, to swing, —	колы́хивать.	колы́хну́ть, —
Маха́ть, to wave, —	ма́хивать.	махну́ть, —
Плеска́ть, to splash, II. 7.	плески́вать.	плесну́ть, —
Прыска́ть, to syringe, —	прыски́вать.	прысну́ть, —
Свиста́ть, to whistle, —	свисты́вать.	свисну́ть, —
Хлеста́ть, to lash, —	хлёсты́вать.	хлесну́ть, —
Грести́, to scrape, <i>irr.</i>	греба́ть.	гребну́ть, —
Ду́ть, to blow, —	дува́ть.	ду́ну́ть, —
Жечь, to burn, —	жига́ть.	жигну́ть, —
Рва́ть, to tear, —	рыва́ть.	рвану́ть, —
Стричь, to shear, —	стрига́ть.	стригну́ть, —
Трести́, to skake, —	тряса́ть.	тряхну́ть, —

Some verbs, as *мину́ть, обману́ть, помяну́ть, выну́ть*, which are perfect aspects of *миновать, to pass; обманывать, to cheat; поминать, to mention; вынимать, to take out*, have the termination of the perfect aspect of unity; but by their meaning they do not designate an action performed only once. In these verbs the letter *н* belongs to the root, and not to the termination.

63.—The *double* simple verbs are those which designate the movement of an acting object, or sometimes a visible or audible action. These verbs have together three aspects: 1) the *definite imperfect*, 2) the *indefinite imperfect*, and 3) the *iterative*

aspect. The definite aspect is the radical form, from which are derived both the others. These are the following verbs:

1) <i>Definite imperfect aspect.</i>	2) <i>Indefinite imp. aspect.</i>	3) <i>Iterative aspect.</i>
Блудить, to ramble, II. 4.	блуждать, I. 1.	—
Брести, to wander, <i>irr.</i>	бродить, II. 4.	браживать.
Бѣжать, to run, <i>irr.</i>	бѣгать, I. 1.	бѣгивать and бѣгать.
Валить, to throw down, II. 1.	валать, I. 3.	важивать.
Везти, to carry, <i>irr.</i>	возить, II. 4.	важивать.
Вести, to lead, <i>irr.</i>	водить, —	важивать.
Видѣть, to see, II. 4.	видать, I. 1.	видывать.
Гнать, to drive, <i>irr.</i>	гонять, I. 3.	ганивать.
Идти, to go, <i>irr.</i>	ходить, II. 4.	хаживать.
Катить, to roll, II. 5.	качать, I. 1.	качивать.
Кривить, to crook, II. 2.	кривлять, I. 3.	кривлять.
Летѣть, to fly, II. 5.	летать, I. 1.	лѣтывать.
Ломить, to break, II. 2.	ломать, —	ламывать.
Лѣзть, to climb, <i>irr.</i>	лѣзть, II. 4.	лѣзать and лѣживать.
Нести, to bring, <i>irr.</i>	носить, II. 6.	нашивать.
Плыть, to swim, <i>irr.</i>	плавать, I. 1.	плывать.
Ползти, to crawl, <i>irr.</i>	ползать, —	ползать and ползывать.
Ронить, to let fall, II. 1.	ронять, I. 3.	ранивать.
Слышать, to hear, II. 3.	слыхать, I. 1.	слыхивать.
Садить, to seat, II. 4.	сажать, —	саживать.
Ташить, to trail, II. 3.	таскать, —	таскивать.
Ѣхать, to ride, <i>irr.</i>	ѣздить, II. 4.	ѣзживать and ѣзжать.

The Russian language has some verbs which, with a double termination, do not designate a movement; such are: блистать and блестять, to shine; мѣрить and мѣрять, to measure; свистать and свистѣть, to whistle. These verbs do not belong to the class of the double verbs; they are two various forms which have the same meaning, and which do not express the definite or indefinite nature of the action.

Prepositional verbs.

64.—The prepositional verbs are formed from the simple verbs by means of any preposition. The prepositions, when they are joined to a verb, sub-

ject it to sundry changes either in the voice, \*in the aspect and time, or in the meaning.

1. A neuter verb sometimes takes with the preposition the active meaning,, as: спать, *to sleep*, and проспáть, *to pass in sleeping*; быть, *to be*, and забыть, *to forget*; пла́кать, *to weep*, and выпла́кать, *to obtain by weeping*.

2. The influence of a preposition on the time and aspect is more important than that on the voice. A simple verb, taking a preposition, receives a more restricted meaning. Thus, by joining to a preposition, the iterative aspect becomes imperfect, and the imperfect aspect becomes perfect. But this latter remains a perfect aspect even with a preposition, as is seen by the two following examples.

<i>Simple figure.</i>		<i>Prepositional figure.</i>	
Двѣнуть, to move,	} <i>perf. asp. of unity.</i>	Вдвѣнуть, to move in,	} <i>perf. asp. of unity.</i>
Бросить, to throw,		Набросить, to throw on,	
Двѣгать,	} <i>imperfect aspect . . .</i>	Вдвѣгать,	} <i>perf. asp. of duration.</i>
бросáть,		набросáть,	
Двѣгáть or двѣгивáть,	} <i>iterative asp.</i>	Вдвѣгáть or двѣгивáть,	} <i>imperfect asp</i>
бросáывать, . . . . .		набросáывать, . . . . .	

3. The acceptance of the verb, independently of the completion of the action, is modified by the meaning of the preposition, as is seen in the two following examples: ходить or идти́, *to go*, and имáть or ять, *to take*.

Входить, войти́, to go in.	Нисходить, нисзойти́, to go down.
Восходить, взойти́, to go up.	Обходить, обойти́, to go round.
Выходить, выйти́, to go out.	Отходить, отойти́, to go away.
Доходить, дойти́, to come to.	Переходить, перейти́, to go over.
Заходить, зайти́, to go behind.	Превосходить, превзойти́, to surpass.
Исходить, изойти́, to go out.	
Находить, найти́, to go upon.	

<b>Походить</b> , to resemble.	<b>Донимать</b> , <b>донять</b> , to get the remainder.
<b>Пойти</b> , to go.	
<b>Подходить</b> , <b>подойти</b> , to go under.	<b>Занимать</b> , <b>занять</b> , to borrow.
<b>Предходить</b> , to go before.	<b>Изнимать</b> , <b>изнять</b> , to take out.
<b>Приходить</b> , <b>прійти</b> , to come in.	<b>Нанимать</b> , <b>нанять</b> , to hire.
<b>Проходить</b> , <b>пройти</b> , to go through.	<b>Обнимать</b> , <b>обнять</b> , to embrace.
<b>Происходить</b> , <b>произоити</b> , to proceed.	<b>Отнимать</b> , <b>отнять</b> , to take away.
<b>Расходиться</b> , <b>разойтись</b> , to go asunder.	<b>Перенимать</b> , <b>перенять</b> , to intercept. [stand.
<b>Сходить</b> , <b>сойти</b> , to go down.	<b>Понимать</b> , <b>понять</b> , to understand.
<b>Снисходить</b> , <b>снизойти</b> , to condescend.	<b>Поймать</b> , to catch.
<b>Уходить</b> , <b>уйти</b> , to go away.	<b>Поднимать</b> , <b>поднять</b> , to take up.
<b>Внимать</b> , <b>внять</b> , to attend to.	<b>Предпринимать</b> , <b>предпринять</b> , to undertake.
<b>Взимать</b> , to levy.	<b>Принимать</b> , <b>принять</b> , to accept.
<b>Взять</b> , to take.	<b>Приподнимать</b> , <b>приподнять</b> , to raise up.
<b>Воздымать</b> , to raise.	<b>Пронимать</b> , <b>пронять</b> , to put through.
<b>Воспринимать</b> , <b>воспринять</b> , to receive.	<b>Разнимать</b> , <b>разнять</b> , to take asunder.
<b>Вынимать</b> , <b>вынуть</b> , to take out.	<b>Снимать</b> , <b>снять</b> , to take off.
	<b>Унимать</b> , <b>унять</b> , to repress.

The two preceding examples show that the prepositions which are joined to verbs, are: **в** (**во**), **вз** (**взо**, **воз**), **вы**, **до**, **за**, **из** (**изо**), **на**, **над** (**надо**), **низ** (**низо**), **о** or **об** (**обо**), **от** (**ото**), **пере** or **пре**, **по**, **под** (**подо**), **при**, **про**, **раз** (**разо**), **с** (**со**), **у**. We must remark that the prepositions which end in a vowel, never undergo a change, whilst those which end in a consonant, take the vowel *o*, when they have to be united to a verb which begins with two or three consonants, as well as to the verb *идти* (*sl. ити*), in which the vowel *u* besides that changes into the semi-vowel (*й*).

The prepositions **без** (**безо**), **пред** (**предо**), and also **с** (**со**) in the meaning of a reciprocal action, modifying the acceptance of a verb, do not communicate to it the meaning of the completion of an action. Joined to one of these prepositions, the verb remains in its imperfect aspect, as: **безчестить**, to dishonour; **предвидѣть**, to foresee; **содѣйствовать**, to cooperate.

It is the same with adverbs used sometimes for prepositions, e. g. *ПРОТИВОСТОЯТЬ*, to resist; *МИМОИДТИ*, to come by.

Care must be taken not to confound the prepositional verbs with the verbs which are derived from nouns formed with a preposition, as: *РАЗУМѢТЬ*, to understand, from *РАЗУМЪ*, intelligence; *ПОМНИТЬ*, to remember, from *ПАМЯТЬ*, memory; *СОВѢСТИТЬСЯ*, to have a conscience, from *СОВѢСТЬ*, conscience. These verbs belong to the class of the incomplete simple verbs.

65.—The prepositional verbs, with regard to their delineation, differ among them, according as they are formed from the defective, incomplete, complete or double simple verbs.

1. Those which are derived from a *defective* simple verb, have only the *perfect* aspect, which is purely the imperfect aspect of the simple verb, joined to one of the prepositions above enumerated. Such are:

Пожелать, to wish, I. 1.	Растерять, to lose, I. 3.
Покара́ть, to chastise, —	Возьмѣть, to have, I. 4.
Отмечать, to imagine, —	Завладѣть, to possess, —
Воспы́лать, to burst into flames, —	Сумѣть, to know, —
Нары́даться, to wail, —	Оцени́ться, to whelp, II. 1.
Постара́ться, to endeavour, —	Остепени́ться, to grow sedate, —
Ошельмовать, to treat like a rogue, I. 2.	Возгорди́ться, to be proud of, II. 4.
Возопи́ть (for <i>взвонѣть</i> ), to cry out, I. 3.	Пощади́ть, to spare, —
	Затрепета́ть, to tremble, II. 7.
	Поблѣкнутъ, to fade, III. 1.

Some verbs derived from the defective simple verbs, have also the *imperfect* aspect, which is formed from the iterative aspect, not used in the simple verb and taken in its contracted form, as will be seen later (2. b).

The preceding and the following examples show that the *perfect* aspect of a prepositional verb is formed from the im-

perfect aspect of the simple verb, by the mere joining of a preposition, without any change in the termination of the verb. Further, the infinitive and the imperative from imperfect become *perfect* (стараться, *to endeavour*; старайся, *endeavour*, and постараться, *to use all one's endeavours*; постарайся, *use all your endeavours*); the present (старюсь, *I endeavour*) becomes a *perfect future* (постарюсь, *I shall endeavour, I shall use all my endeavours*), and the imperfect preterit (старался, *I endeavoured*) becomes a *perfect preterit* (постарался, *I have used all my endeavours*).

As the prepositions serve generally to form the perfect preterit and future of the defective simple verbs, custom only can show what is the preposition which a verb takes in order to designate the completion of an action. Thus *за* expresses a beginning; *но*, a part; *до*, the finishing; *от*, the discontinuance; *про*, all the time; *с*, *у*, *за*, *но*, the completion and simultaneousness; *вы*, *из*, *об*, *при*, *пере*, a totality. E. g. заговорить, *to begin to speak*; поговорить, *to speak a little*; договорить, *to finish speaking*; отговорить, *to leave off speaking*; проговорить, *to pass the time in speaking*; сделать, *to have made*; украсть, *to have stolen*; засмяться, *to have laughed*; покраснеть, *to have blushed*; выходить, исходить, обходить, *to have gone all over*; приесть, *to have eaten all up*; переделать, *to have made all*.

2. Derived from the *incomplete* simple verbs, the prepositional verbs have two aspects: 1) the *perfect* aspect, and 2) the *imperfect* aspect, which are formed, the former from the imperfect, and the latter from the iterative aspect of the simple verb, at first without any change in the terminations, at other times with contraction, sometimes even with and without contraction at the same time: occasionally they vary widely from the general rules for the formation of the prepositional verbs. We sometimes find: a quite irregular formation, the want of one of the two aspects perfect or imperfect, the loss or non-existence of the simple verb which has

formed the prepositional verb, and several other irregularities which are mentioned below.

We must remark that in the prepositional verbs the tonic accent remains upon the same syllable as in the simple verb, with exception of the verbs formed with the preposition *съ*, which in the perfect aspect transfer the accent of this preposition. Some monosyllabic verbs, taking a preposition, transfer also, in the preterit of the perfect aspect, the accent to the preposition; as: *умеръ, отперъ, прибылъ, началъ, &c.*, from *умерѣть, to die; отперѣть, to open; прибыть, to arrive; начать, to begin.*

a) The perfect and imperfect aspects of the prepositional verb preserve both the terminations of the imperfect and iterative aspects of the simple verb. Such are:

1) Perfect aspect.	2) Imperfect asp.
Угадѣть, to guess, I. 1. . . . .	угадывать, I. 1.
Обдумать, to deliberate, — . . . . .	обдумывать, —
Отдѣлать, to finish, — . . . . .	отдѣлывать, —
Заиграть, to play, — . . . . .	заигрывать, —
Окутать, to wrap about, — . . . . .	окутывать, —
Промотать, to squander, — . . . . .	проматывать, —
Смѣшать, to mingle, — . . . . .	смѣшивать, —
Узнать, to recognise, — . . . . .	узнавать, —
Приковать, to chain to, I. 2. . . . .	приковывать, —
Обрисовать, to outline, — . . . . .	обрисовывать, —
Основать, to found, — . . . . .	основывать, —
Завоевать, to conquer, — . . . . .	завоевывать, —
Прогулять, to walk, I. 3. . . . .	прогуливать, —
Осмѣять, to laugh at, — . . . . .	осмѣивать, —
Усѣять, to sow, — . . . . .	усѣвать, —
Ослабѣть, to grow weak, I. 4. . . . .	ослабѣвать, —
Договеть, to fast, — . . . . .	договѣивать, —
Согрѣть, to warm, — . . . . .	согрѣвать, —
Зажарить, to roast, II. 1. . . . .	зажаривать, —
Усмотрѣть, to discern, — . . . . .	усматривать, —



1) *Perfect aspect.*2) *Imperfect asp.*

ь, to damage, II. 4. . . . .	повреждать, I. 1.
Побудить, to incite, — . . . . .	побуждать, —
Приблизить, to draw near, — . . . . .	приближать, —
Замѣтить, to remark, II. 5. . . . .	замѣчать, —
Погасить, to put out, II. 6. . . . .	погашать, —
Обольстить, to seduce, II. 7. . . . .	обольщать, —
Отомстить, to avenge, — . . . . .	отмщать, —
Посвятить, to hallow, — . . . . .	посвящать, —

c) Sometimes in the same verb the imperfect aspect is formed in two ways, with contraction and without contraction. Here we must remark that, if the prepositional verb retains its primitive, simple, physical meaning, the termination of its imperfect aspect is without contraction, and that on the contrary it is contracted, if the prepositional verb takes an abstract, figurative, intellectual acceptation, as is seen in the following examples:

1) *Perfect aspect.*2) *Imperfect asp.*1) *Perfect aspect.*2) *Imperfect asp.*

Разбранить, to scold, II. 1. . . . .	разбранивать, I. 1. . . . .	Возбранить, to forbid, I. 1. . . . .	возбранять, I. 3. . . . .
Запалить, to kindle, — . . . . .	запаливать, — . . . . .	Воспалить, to inflame, — . . . . .	воспалять, — . . . . .
Переполнить, to fill, — . . . . .	переполнивать, — . . . . .	Исполнить, to fulfil, — . . . . .	исполнять, — . . . . .
Перестроить, to rebuild, — . . . . .	перестраивать, — . . . . .	Устроить, to arrange, — . . . . .	устроить, — . . . . .
Завострить, to sharpen, — . . . . .	завостривать, — . . . . .	Поострить, to excite, — . . . . .	поощрять, — . . . . .
Изловить, to catch, II. 2. . . . .	излавливать, — . . . . .	Уловить, to surprise, II. 2. . . . .	уловлять, — . . . . .
Подмочить, to wet, II. 3. . . . .	подмачивать, — . . . . .	Омочить, to steep, II. 3. . . . .	омочать, I. 1. . . . .
Выучить, to teach, — . . . . .	выучивать, — . . . . .	Научить, to initiate, — . . . . .	научать, — . . . . .
Загородить, to fence, II. 4. . . . .	загораживать, — . . . . .	Оградить, to guard, II. 4. . . . .	ограждать, — . . . . .
Пересудить, to rejudge, — . . . . .	пересуживать, — . . . . .	Осудить, to condemn, — . . . . .	осуждать, — . . . . .
Осадить, to plant, — . . . . .	осаживать, — . . . . .	Осадить, to besiege, — . . . . .	осаждать, — . . . . .
Выпередить, to outgo, — . . . . .	выперевивать, — . . . . .	Предупредить, to prevent, — . . . . .	предупреждать, — . . . . .
Вытвердить, to rehearse, — . . . . .	вытвривать, — . . . . .	Утвердить, to affirm, — . . . . .	утверждать, — . . . . .
Помутить, to muddy, II. 5. . . . .	помучивать, — . . . . .	Возмутить, to raise, II. 7. . . . .	возмущать, — . . . . .
Засвѣтить, to light, — . . . . .	засвѣчивать, — . . . . .	Просвѣтить, to enlighten, — . . . . .	просвѣщать, — . . . . .
Закрасить, to colour, II. 6. . . . .	закрашивать, — . . . . .	Украсить, to adorn, II. 6. . . . .	украшать, — . . . . .
Загоститься, to visit, II. 7. . . . .	загашиваться, — . . . . .	Угостить, to regale, II. 7. . . . .	угощать, — . . . . .

d) The inchoative verbs in *нуть*, which by their nature have not the iterative aspect, take, in the

formation of the imperfect aspect of prepositional verbs, the termination *ать*, e.g.

1) <i>Perfect aspect.</i>	2) <i>Imperfect asp.</i>
Замёрзнуть, to freeze, III. 1. . . . .	замерзать, I. 1.
Потухнуть, to go out, — . . . . .	потухать, —
Погибнуть, to perish, — . . . . .	погибать, —
Окиснуть, to grow sour, — . . . . .	окисать, —
Утихнуть, to abate, — . . . . .	утихать, —
Погаснуть, to go out, — . . . . .	погасать, —
Озябнуть, to starve, — . . . . .	озябать, —
Замокнуть, to grow wet, — . . . . .	замокать, —
Иссохнуть, to dry up, — . . . . .	иссыхать, —
Издохнуть, to die, — . . . . .	издыхать, —
Привыкнуть, to habituate, — . . . . .	привыкать, —
Исчезнуть, to vanish, — . . . . .	исчезать, —

c) The Russian language has some prepositional verbs, the simple verb of which is no more used or is lost. Such are:

1) <i>Perfect aspect.</i>	2) <i>Imperfect asp.</i>
Оправдать, to justify, I. 1. . . . .	оправдывать, I. 1.
Обнародовать, to publish, I. 2. . . . .	обнародывать, —
Затягать, to devise, I. 3. . . . .	затягивать, —
Одолеть, to surmount, I. 4. . . . .	одолевать, —
Укоренить, to root, II. 1. . . . .	укоренять, I. 3.
Водворить, to settle, — . . . . .	водворять, —
Разорить, to ruin, — . . . . .	разорять, —
Ударить, to strike, — . . . . .	ударять, —
Повторить, to repeat, — . . . . .	повторять, —
Истребить, to destroy, II. 2. . . . .	истреблять, —
Одушевить, to animate, — . . . . .	одушевлять, —
Усыновить, to adopt, — . . . . .	усыновлять, —
Надоумить, to instruct, — . . . . .	надоумливать, I. 1.
Приложить, to add, II. 3. . . . .	прилагать, —
Уничижить, to humble, — . . . . .	уничижать, —

1) <i>Perfect aspect.</i>	2) <i>Imperfect asp.</i>
Уничто́жить, to annul, II. 3. . . . .	уничтожа́ть, I. 1.
Воору́жить, to arm, — . . . . .	воору́жать, —
Вну́шить, to suggest, — . . . . .	внуша́ть, —
Вручи́ть, to hand, — . . . . .	вруча́ть, —
Исто́щить, to exhaust, — . . . . .	исто́щать, —
Соору́дить, to erect, II. 4. . . . .	соору́жать, —
Побѣди́ть, to vanquish, — . . . . .	побѣжда́ть, —
Услади́ть, to delight, — . . . . .	услажда́ть, —
Пронзи́ть, to pierce, — . . . . .	пронза́ть, —
Оби́дѣть, to offend, — . . . . .	оби́жать, —
Встрѣ́тить, to meet, II. 5. . . . .	встрѣ́чать, —
Отвѣ́тить, to answer, — . . . . .	отвѣ́чать, —
Воскреси́ть, to revive, II. 6. . . . .	воскреша́ть, —
Помѣсти́ть, to place, II. 7. . . . .	помѣща́ть, —
Подусти́ть, to instigate, — . . . . .	поду́щать, —
Посѣ́тить, to visit, — . . . . .	посѣ́щать, —
Украти́ть, to appease, — . . . . .	укро́щать, —
Насы́тить, to satiate, — . . . . .	насы́щать, —
Защи́тить, to protect, — . . . . .	защи́щать, —
Дости́гнуть, to reach, III. 1. . . . .	достига́ть, —
Воскреси́нуть, to resuscitate, — . . . . .	воскреса́ть, —
Окуну́ть, to dip, — . . . . .	оку́нывать, —
Замкнѹ́ть, to lock, — . . . . .	замы́кать, —
Ушиби́ть, to bruise, — . . . . .	ушиба́ть, —
Просте́рть, to extend, III. 2. . . . .	простира́ть, —
Обу́ть, to put shoes, <i>irr.</i> . . . . .	обува́ть, —
Попра́ть, to trample, — . . . . .	попира́ть, —
Распи́ять, to crucify, — . . . . .	распина́ть, —
Нача́ть, to begin, — . . . . .	начина́ть, —
Отня́ть, to take out, — . . . . .	отнима́ть, —
Отверзти́, to open, — . . . . .	отверза́ть, —
Обрѣ́сти, to find out, — . . . . .	обрѣ́тать, —
Сче́сть, to count, — . . . . .	счита́ть, —
Разсвѣ́сти, to grow light, — . . . . .	разсвѣ́тать, —
Запрѣ́чь, to put to, — . . . . .	запрѣ́гать, —

Among these verbs there are several which are also used with other prepositions besides those which are above indicated.

f) The following verbs do not form their perfect aspect from the imperfect aspect of the used simple verb, but from some disused aspect of this simple verb.

1) *Perfect aspect.*2) *Imperfect aspect.*

Замѣнить, II. 1 (instead of *замѣнять*). замѣнять, to compensate, I. 3.  
 Застрѣлить, — (instead of *застрѣлѣть*). застрѣливать, to shoot, kill, I. 1.  
 Вскочить, II. 3 (instead of *вскакать*) . . вскакивать, to leap in, —  
 Укусить, II. 6 (instead of *укусать*) . . укусывать, to bite, —  
 Возвѣстить, II. 7 (instead of *возвѣщать*). возвѣщать, to announce, —  
 Поглотить, — (instead of *поглотать*) . поглощать, to swallow up, —

g) Some prepositional verbs are formed irregularly, and occasionally they have two formations, one regular, and the other irregular. Such are:

## REGULAR FORMATION

## IRREGULAR FORMATION.

1) *Perfect aspect*2) *Imperfect aspect.*1) *Perfect aspect.*2) *Imperfect aspect.*

Презрѣть, to despise, II. 1. . . презирать, I. 1	& Обозрѣть, to examine, II. 1. обозрѣвать, I. 1.
Сыскать, to find, II. 7. . . . . сыскивать, —	& Снискать, to obtain, II. 7. . . . . снискивать, —
Обуздать, to curb, I. 1. . . . . обуздывать, —	& Вязуздать, to bridle, I. 1. . . . . вязуздывать, —
Создать, to build, <i>irr.</i> (созыжду) создавать, —	& Создать (созда́мъ), . . . . . создавать (создаю).
Нагрести, to rake up, <i>irr.</i> . . . . . нагребать, —	& Погребсти, to bury, <i>irr.</i> . . . . . погребать, I. 1.
Позволить, to permit, II. 1. . . . . позволять, I. 3	& Уволить, to discharge, II. 1. увольнять, I. 3.
Осмѣять, to deride, I. 3. . . . . осмѣивать, I. 1	& Насмѣяться, to laugh at, I. 3. насмѣхаться, I. 1
Обязать, to bind, II. 4. . . . . обязывать, —	& Обязать, to oblige, II. 4. . . . . обязывать, —
Сравнить, to even, I. 3. . . . . сравнивать, —	& Сравнить, to compare, II. 1. сравнивать, —
Принять, to take, <i>irr.</i> (приму) принимать, —	& Вынуть, to take out, III. 1. вынимать, —
Прибѣжать, to run up, <i>irr.</i> . . . . . прибѣгать, —	& Прибѣгнуть, to resort, III. 1. прибѣгать, —

h) Other prepositional verbs have no perfect aspect and therefore fall into the class of defective simple verbs; such are the following:

Обожать, to adore, I. 1.	Ожидать, to wait, I. 1.
Обладать, to dominate, —	Обитать, to habit, —
Объщать, to promise, —	Опасаться, to fear, —
Завѣщать, to bequeath, —	Обуревать, to agitate, —
Увѣщавать, to exhort, —	Подражать, to imitate, —
Охудать, to criticize, —	Подобать, to be necessary, —
Осязать, to touch, —	Порицать, to blame, —

Подозрѣвать, to suspect, I. 1.	Ущербляться, to decrease, I. 3.
Сомнѣваться, to doubt, —	Сожаждать, to take pity, I. 4.
Созерцать, to contemplate, —	Смыслишь, to understand, II. 1.
Изобилловать, to abound, I. 2.	Состоять, to consist, —
Наслѣдовать, to inherit, —	Упрямиться, to be obstinate, II. 2.
Повиноваться, to obey, —	Содержать, to maintain, II. 3.
Привѣтствовать, to welcome, —	Предвидѣть, to foresee, II. 4.
Обонять, to scent, I. 3.	Походить, to resemble, —
Упражнять, to occupy, —	Зависѣть, to depend, II. 6.

2) Lastly the following simple verbs have the properties of prepositional verbs, in other words they express the accomplishment of an action without being joined to a preposition and without having the termination of unity in *нѣтъ*. They are called *perfect simple* verbs. Some of them have also the *iterative* aspect.

1) <i>Perfect aspect.</i>	2) <i>Imperfect aspect.</i>	3) <i>Iterative asp.</i>
Благословить, to bless, II. 2.	благословлять, I. 3.	—
Бросить, to throw, II. 6.	бросать, I. 1.	брасывать.
Быть, to be, <i>irr.</i>	бывать, —	быывать.
Велѣть, to order, II. 1.	(велѣть)	велѣвать.
Воротить, to turn, II. 5.	ворочать, I. 1.	ворачивать.
Дать, to give, <i>irr.</i>	давать, — (даю)	—
Дѣть, to put, <i>irr.</i>	дѣвать, —	—
Женить, to marry, II. 1.	(женить)	—
Казнить, to execute, II. 1.	(казнить)	—
Кончить, to end, II. 3.	кончать, —	канчивать.
Купить, to buy, II. 2.	(покупать).	—
Лечь, to lie, <i>irr.</i>	ложиться, II. 3.	—
Лишить, to deprive, II. 3.	лишать, I. 1.	—
Пасть, to fall, <i>irr.</i>	падать, —	(падать).
Плѣнить, to captivate, II. 1.	плѣнять, I. 3.	—
Простить, to pardon, II. 7.	прощать, I. 1.	—
Пустить, to let go, —	пускать and пушать, —	—
Ранить, to hurt, II. 1.	(ранить)	—
Родить, to beget, II. 4.	рожать and раждать, —	—

1) *Perfect aspect.*2) *Imperfect aspect.*3) *Iterative asp.*

Рѹшить, to break down, II. 3. (рѹшить) . . . . .	рѹшивать.
Рѣшить, to decide, II. 3. . . . .	рѣшать, — . . . . . —
Свободить, to deliver, II. 4. . . . .	свобождать, — . . . . . —
Стать, { to become, <i>irr.</i> . . . . становиться, II. 2. . . . . становлѣваться.	
{ to be sufficient, <i>irr.</i> ставать, I. 1. (стаю) . . . . .	—
Ступить, to go, II. 2. . . . .	ступать, — . . . . . —
Сѣсть, to sit, <i>irr.</i> . . . . .	садиться, II. 4. . . . . —
Хватить, to seize, II. 5. . . . .	хватать, I. 1. . . . . хвачивать.
Явить, to show, II. 2. . . . .	являть, I. 3. . . . . —
Ять, to take, <i>irr.</i> . . . . .	имать, I. 1. and II. 2 (имаю & ёмлю). —

To the list of perfect simple verbs we must add some verbs taken from foreign languages and ending in *овать*, e. g. *атаковать*, to attack; *конфисковать*, to confiscate, which express both the perfect and imperfect aspects with the same termination and without preposition.

The verbs *велѣть*, *женить*, *казнить*, *ранить* and *рѹшить*, do not change their termination to form the perfect and imperfect aspects; the perfect future (*велю*, *женю*, *казню*, *раню* and *рѹшу*) is also used for the present. In the verb *купить*, the present and the imperfect preterit are borrowed from the prepositional verb *покупать*. The verbs *даровать*, to give; *миновать*, to pass, and *образовать*, to form, as well as the inflections *дароваль*, *миноваль* and *образоваль*, are of the perfect aspect; but the inflections *дарую*, *миную* and *образую* are of the present. The verb *миновать* forms its future with *минѹ*, *минешь*, and the preterit has the two inflections *минѹль* and *миноваль*.

With regard to the perfect simple verbs we remark that in such of them as express a physical action, performed by a single motion (as *бросить*, *дать*, *дѣть*, *пасть*, *пустить*, *ступить*, *хватить*, *ять*) the meaning of their perfect aspect is the same as that of the aspect of unity in complete verbs (§ 62).

These perfect simple verbs, with the exception of *благословить*, *женить*, *казнить*, *лишить*, *ранить* and *плѣнить*, form also prepositional verbs. Such are:

1) <i>Perfect aspect.</i>	2) <i>Imperfect aspect.</i>
Забѣть, to forget, <i>irr.</i> . . . . .	забыва́ть, I. 1.
Повелѣть, to order, II. 1. . . . .	повелѣва́ть, —
Разда́ть, to distribute, <i>irr.</i> , . . . . .	раздава́ть, —
Оде́ть, to dress, <i>irr.</i> . . . . .	оде́ва́ть, —
Раскупи́ть, to buy up, II. 2. . . . .	раскупа́ть, —
Зале́чь, to hide one's self, <i>irr.</i> . . . .	залега́ть, —
Упа́сть, to fall, <i>irr.</i> . . . . .	упада́ть, —
Распростѣ́ться, to take leave, II. 7. . .	распроща́ться, —
Пропустѣ́ть, to let pass, — . . . . .	пропуска́ть, —
Уродѣ́ть, to produce, II. 4. . . . .	урожа́ть, —
Разру́шить, to destroy, II. 6. . . . .	разруша́ть, —
Разрѣши́ть, to decide, — . . . . .	разрѣша́ть, —
Освободи́ть, to free, II. 4. . . . .	освобождáть, —
Доста́ть, to procure, <i>irr.</i> . . . . .	достава́ть, —
Останови́ть, to stop, II. 2. . . . .	останавли́вать, —
Высту́пить, to go out, II. 2. . . . .	выступа́ть, —
Заса́сть, to sit, <i>irr.</i> . . . . .	заса́да́ть, —
Изъя́вить, to indicate, II. 2. . . . .	изъявля́ть, I. 3.

The verbs *бро́сить*, *вороти́ть*, *кони́ть* and *хвати́ть* have the two perfect aspects in their prepositional verbs, like those derived from the complete simple verbs, as we shall subsequently see. For the prepositional verbs derived from *ять*, see § 65. 3.

3. Such prepositional verbs as are derived from the *complete* simple verbs, have in addition to the preceding *perfect* and *imperfect* aspects, a second perfect aspect, which, being formed from the aspect of unity of the simple verb, indicates that the action has been or will be performed at *one time* and by a single movement, whereas the perfect aspect, which is formed from the imperfect aspect of the simple verb, indicates that the action has been or will be accomplished by various motions, and that occupied or will occupy a certain length of time.

The same remark applies to such prepositional verbs as are formed from certain double verbs, and also from the perfect simple verbs бросить, воротить, кончить and хватить; e. g.

1) Perfect aspect.		2) Imperfect aspect.	
a) of duration.	b) of unity.		
Выболтать, I. 1.	выболтнуть, III. 1.	выбáлтывать, to divulge, I. 1.	
Накидать, — .	накинуть, — . .	наки́дывать, to heap up, —	
Вспорхать, — .	вспорхнуть, — .	вспáрхивать, to flutter, —	
Выпрыгать, — .	выпрыгнуть, — .	выпры́гивать, to skip out, —	
Столкать, — .	столкнуть, — .	ста́лкивать, to push down, —	
Захлопать, — .	захлопнуть, — .	захло́пывать, to shut with a clap, —	
Забрызгать, —	забрызнуть, — .	забры́згивать, to besprinkle, —	
Всовать, I. 2.	всунуть, — . .	всо́вывать, to shove in, —	
Выклевать, — .	выклюнуть, — .	выкле́вывать, to peck out, —	
Придавить, II. 2.	придавить, — .	прида́вливать, to press to, —	
Окликать, II. 5.	окликнуть, — .	окли́кать, to call to, —	
Сдуть, <i>irr.</i> . .	сдунуть, — . .	сду́вать, to blow off, —	
Поджечь, — .	поджигнуть, — .	поджи́гать, to fire, —	
Вывалить, I. 3.	вывалить, II. 1.	выва́ливать, to throw out, —	
Прокатать, I. 1.	прокатить, II. 5.	прока́тывать, to roll through, —	
Выломать, — .	выломить, II. 2.	выла́мывать, to break out, —	
Сронять, I. 3.	сронить, II. 1.	сра́нивать, to throw down, —	
Вытаскать, I. 1.	вытащить, II. 3.	выта́скивать, to pull out, —	
Забросать, — .	забросить, II. 6.	забра́сывать, to throw beyond, —	
Сворочать, — .	своротить, II. 5.	свора́чивать, to avert, —	
Окончать, — .	окончить, II. 3.	окан́чивать, to terminate, —	
Захватать, — .	захватить, II. 5.	захва́тывать, to catch, —	

The simple verbs говорить, ловить, бить, брать and класть, to indicate an action performed by one movement, borrow their perfect aspect from another verb; as:

1) Imperfect aspect.	2) Perfect aspect.
a) of duration.	b) of unity.
Говорить, to speak, say, II. 1.	поговори́ть . сказа́ть, II. 4.
Ловить, to seize, catch, II. 2.	излови́ть . пойма́ть, I. 1.



1) *Imperfect aspect.*2) *Perfect aspect.*

	a) of duration.	b) of unity.
Бить, to beat, <i>irr.</i> . . . . .	побить . . .	удари́ть, II. 1.
Брать, to take, <i>irr.</i> . . . . .	побра́ть, . . .	взя́ть, <i>irr.</i> (возьму́).
Класть, to lay, <i>irr.</i> . . . . .	покла́сть . . .	положи́ть, II. 3.

4. From the *double* simple verbs two prepositional verbs are formed, which with their two aspects, the *perfect* and the *imperfect*, have each a particular signification. Such are:

1) From the *definite* verb.2) From the *indefinite* verb.

a) <i>Perfect asp.</i>	b) <i>Imperfect asp.</i>	a) <i>Perfect asp.</i>	b) <i>Imperfect asp.</i>
Выбрести, <i>irr.</i> выбродить, to go out, II. 4.		& Выбродить, II. 4.	выбра́живать, to ferment, I. 1.
Выбыжать, — выбыгать, to flee, I. 1. .		& Выбыгать, I. 1.	выбы́гивать, to precede, —
Завезти, — завозить, to bring back, II. 4.		& Завозить, II. 4.	зава́живать, to transport, —
Провести, — проводить, to conduct, —		& Проводить, —	провожа́ть, to accompany, —
Загнать, — . . . . .	загоня́ть, to drive, I. 3.	& Загоня́ть, I. 3.	зага́нивать, to harass, —
Выйти, — . . . . .	выходи́ть, to go out, II. 4.	& Выходи́ть, II. 4.	выха́живать, to obtain, —
Влетѣть, II. 5.	влетать, to fly in, I. 1. .	& Перелетѣть, I. 1.	перелѣ́тывать, to fly by, —
Донести, <i>irr.</i> доносить, to denounce, II. 6.		& Доноси́ть, II. 6.	дона́шивать, to wear out, —
Вползти, — вползать, to creep in, I. 1. .		& Отползати, I. 1.	отпа́лывать, to go away, —
Вызхать, — . . . . .	вызжа́ть, to go out, I. 1. .	& Вызжа́ть, II. 4.	вызжа́живать, to train, —

From the other double verbs are formed prepositional verbs as from the incomplete or complete verbs. The verbs *валить*, *катить*, *ломить*, *ронить* and *тащить* form prepositional verbs with the two perfect aspects of duration and of unity, as we have seen above.

## EXERCISES ON THE VERBS.

Regular verbs. I do good, as much as I wish. Thou desirest in-  
 — Я дѣлать добро́, ско́лько я жа́лать. Ты жа́лать '  
*Present.*

struct thyself. He imagines that he knows all the sciences,  
 учи́ться. Онъ дума́ть что онъ зна́ть весь нау́ка,

and he boasts of his success. We dare not believe in  
 и хва́стать (*instr.*) свой успѣхъ. Я дерза́ть не вѣ́рять (*dat.*)

your words, even when you speak the truth. My neighbours  
вашъ слѣво, хотѣ ты говорѣть правда. Мой сосѣдъ

only live on bread, and trust in Providence.  
одѣнъ питѣться (*instr.*) хлѣбъ, и уповѣть на (*acc.*) Провидѣніе.

You trade in cloth, and you ask much.  
Ты торговѣть (*instr.*) сукно, и ты трѣбовать (*gen.*) многое.

The pigeon cooes; the turtle moans; dogs bark; puppies  
Голубъ ворковать; горлица стонѣть; собака лаять; щенокъ

yelp; the frog croaks; the raven croaks; the crow caws;  
бrehѣть; лягушка квѣкать; воронъ гракать; ворона каркать;

lions roar; the stag bells; fowls cluck; the cat  
левъ рыкать; олѣнь токовать; курица кудѣхтать; кошка  
mews; oxen bellow; the bee hums; the serpent hisses;  
мяукать; быкъ мычать; пчела жужжѣть; змѣя шипѣть;

eagles scream; nightingales twitter; sheep and lambs  
орѣлъ трубѣть; соловей щебетѣть; овца и ягненокъ

bleat; pigs grunt; the fox yelps; the ass brays; the  
блѣять; свинья хрюкать; лисица визжѣть; осѣлъ ревѣть;

turkey gobbles; the quail calls; the cock crows;  
калкунъ клохтѣть; перепѣлка вавѣкать; пѣтухъ кукурекать;

the magpie chatters; the parrot prates. The thunder roars;  
сорѣка скрекотѣть; попугай болѣть. Громъ гремѣть;

water boils; the doors creak; the brooks murmur; the fire  
вода кипѣть; дверь скрипѣть; ручей жужжѣть; огонь

crackles; the stars twinkle; the sun shines; honey-bees  
трепѣть; звѣзда сверкать; солнце свѣтитѣть; пчела

swarm; diamonds sparkle; dry leaves rattle; the wind  
ронѣться; алмазъ блестять; сухой листь хрустѣть; вѣтеръ

whistles; the snow melts. The sun illumines the earth with  
свистѣть; снѣгъ тѣять. Солнце озарѣть земля (*instr.*)

its rays, warms and vivifies her. The earth turns  
свой лучъ, грѣть и живить онъ. Земля обращаться  
round the sun. You grieve in vain.  
вокругъ (*gen.*) солнце. Ты горевать напрасно.

*Preterit.* I walked yesterday on the bank of the river, when  
Я гулять вчера по (*dat.*) берегъ рѣка, когда  
the sun was setting. My sister sat under a tree,  
солнце садиться. Мой сестра сидѣть подѣ (*instr.*) дѣрево,  
which was shaken by the wind. Yesterday, we worked,  
который качаться (*instr.*) вѣтеръ. Вчера я работать,  
read, wrote and drew much. The sheep perished  
читѣть, писать и рисовать много. Овца мерѣть  
through the cold. His mother has been dead a long time.  
отъ (*gen.*) стужа. Онъ мѣть умерѣть давно.  
The enemies have shut him up in the fortress. This  
Непріятель заперѣть онъ въ (*prep.*) крѣпость. Этотъ  
man has become blind, and his wife has become deaf. My  
человѣкъ ослѣпнуть, и онъ жена оглохнуть. Мой  
trees have withered, and my flowers have faded.  
дѣрево, высохнуть, и мой цвѣтъ завянуть.

*Future.* Moscow will shine long at the head of the cities  
Москва красоваться долго во (*prep.*) главѣ городъ  
of Russia. Thou wilt play, and I shall write. The empire  
русскій. Ты играть, и я писать. Государство  
of Russia will develop itself incessantly, and acquire constantly  
Россійскій возвышаться безпрерывно, и приобрѣтѣть всегда  
more force and glory. A great monarch will never  
болѣе (*gen.*) сила и слава. Великій государь не никогда  
die.  
умерѣть.

*Imperative.* Do what thou art bidden, and do not think of resisting.  
Дѣлать что ты говорить, и не думать упрямиться.

Do not lose hope, and trust in God. Go home,  
 Не терять надежда, и уповать на (acc.) Богъ. Ступать домой,  
 and do not dispute so much. Do not lose thy time, and  
 и не толковать столько. Не тратить (gen.) время, и  
 do not torment the animals. Speak always the truth, and  
 не мучить (gen.) животное. Говорить всегда правда, и  
 do not dispute about trifles.  
 не спорить о (prep.) пустякъ.

The nightingale sings; the horse neighs; the wolf howls. Irregular  
 Соловей петь; лошадь ржать; волкъ выть. verbs.

There are animals which sleep during the whole winter.  
 Быть зверь, который спать (acc.) весь зима.

Thou takest much upon thyself, and I do not under-  
 Ты брать много на (acc.) себя, и я не братья  
 take this affair. How do you crumple this book? Не  
 за (acc.) этотъ дѣло. Зачѣмъ ты мять этотъ книга. Онъ  
 lives at Moscow, and is thought to be a rich man.  
 жить въ (prep.) Москвѣ, и слыть (instr.) богатый человекъ.

The shepherd shears the sheep; the peasants spin the flax  
 Пастухъ стричь овца; крестьянинъ прясть лёнъ  
 and weave the linen. He wishes to sleep, and you wish  
 и ткать холстъ. Онъ хотѣть спать, и ты хотѣть  
 to play. My neighbour kept me as his own son, and could  
 играть. Мой сосѣдъ беречь я какъ родной сынъ, и мочь  
 not part with me. The enemies have burnt several  
 не разстаться со (instr.) я. Непріятель сжечь много  
 towns; they were inflamed by hatred and vengeance. The  
 городъ; онъ увлечься (instr.) злоба и мщѣніе.

shepherd pastured the sheep in the meadow. I will send  
 Пастухъ пасти овца на (prep.) лугъ. Я послать  
 for the doctor, and thou wilt send me money. This  
 за (instr.) лѣкарь, и ты прислать я (gen.) деньги. Этотъ

town is flourishing, and it will flourish long through its  
 городъ цвѣсти, и онъ цвѣсти долго (*instr.*)

strength and wealth. I will give thee a book, and thou, what  
 сила и богатство. Я дать ты книга, и ты что

wilt thou give me? Thou canst not say: what will he give  
 дать я? Ты мочь не говорить: что онъ дать

me for that? Do not take upon thyself,  
 я за (*acc.*) этотъ? Не брать на (*acc.*) себя (*gen.*) тотъ (*gen.*)

what thou canst not perform. Children, live in peace, do not  
 что ты мочь не исполнить. Дѣтя, жить мирно, не

swear, never lie, and behave yourselves well.

клясться, не никогда лгать, и вести себя хорошенько.

Definite and  
 indefinite  
 imperfect  
 aspect.

Beasts walk and run, birds and flies fly, fishes  
 Звѣрь ходить и бѣгать, птица и муха летѣть, рыба

swim, and worms crawl. See, a soldier is coming  
 плавать, и червь ползать. Посмотрѣть, солдатъ идти

here; behind him runs a dog. Thou seest, how this  
 сюда; за (*instr.*) онъ бѣжать собака. Видѣть, какъ этотъ

swallow flies fast; they fly always so. This mariner  
 лѣсточка летѣть быстро; онъ летѣть всегда такъ. Сей морякъ

has long sailed on the Black Sea. What is swimming  
 долго плавать по (*dat.*) Чёрный Море. Что плыть

there on the water? The wives of the Slavonians carried  
 тамъ на (*prep.*) вода? Женѣ Славяннѣ носить

water and fetched wood. What dost thou carry in  
 вода и таскать дрова. Что ты нести въ (*prep.*)

this bag? See, what a heap of wood this  
 этотъ мышокъ? Смотрѣть, какой вязанка дрова этотъ

man is drawing. One saw then what one had not  
 человекъ тащить. Видѣть тогда (*gen.*) что не

seen for a long time.

видѣть долговѣ.

The enemy dashed into the town and seized the Perfect aspect of duration and of unity.  
 Непріятель рѣяться въ (acc.) городъ и кидаться на (acc.)  
 booty. It began to lighten. It lightened, there was a  
 корысть. Засверкать молнія. Сверкать молнія, гремѣть  
 violent clap of thunder, the earth trembled, the church  
 сѣльный громъ, земля дрожать, церковь  
 was shaken. My brother went to bed, and began to snore.  
 затрясаться. Мой братъ лечь и захрапѣть.  
 He gave a loud snore and awoke. May I hope, that  
 Храпѣть громко и просыпаться. Мочь я надѣяться, что  
 my lyre will touch once more your hard heart? The sun  
 мой лира трогать ещё вашъ хладный сердце? Солнце  
 began to shine, but not for a long time; it shone for a moment  
 заблестѣть, но не надолго, блеснѣть  
 and disappeared. We have thrown out of the window all  
 и скрывать. Я выбрасывать за (acc.) окно весь  
 the sweepings; among the sweepings we have thrown out  
 соръ; въ (prep.) соръ я выбрасывать  
 also a paper of importance.  
 и бумага важная.

Last year I often went to the town. Socrates Iterative aspect.  
 (gen.) Прѣшлый годъ я ходить въ (acc.) городъ. Сократъ  
 was accustomed to say. The Germans had long inhabited  
 говорить. Нѣмецъ издавна жить  
 Novgorod. When living at Moscow, I  
 въ (prep.) Новгородъ. Жить въ (prep.) Москва, я  
 often went to the monastery of the Trinity. In my youth  
 ѣздить въ (acc.) Лавра Троицкій. Въ (acc.) молодой лѣто  
 I often lived in the country.  
 я жить въ (prep.) деревня.

If the stones could speak, they would teach thee Conditional and Subjunctive.  
 Если бы камень мочь говорить, онъ научить бы ты

prudence. If any one had come to us (gen.) острóжность. Если бъ кто нибудь войти къ (dat.) я at this moment, he would have seen us in despair въ (acc.) éтотъ минúта, онъ увидѣть бы я въ (prep.) отчаянiе, and would have heard our groans and our sighs. There и услышать бы нашъ стенáнiе и нашъ вздохъ. Есть are few things in the world, on which I máю (gen.) предмѣтъ въ (prep.) свѣтъ, на (acc.) который я have not fixed my attention. There was no heart не обращать бы (gen.) внимáнiе. Быть (gen.) не сёрдце so insensible that it did not melt into tears. такой кáменный, который не изливáться бы въ (prep.) слезá.

The differ-  
ent tenses  
and aspects.

This soldier has served long and has received for his service a pension. It is not every soldier that will obtain пѣнсiя. Не всякiй выслуживать it with such distinction. He was in many онъ съ (instr.) такой отличiе. Онъ быть въ (prep.) много battles and distinguished himself everywhere by his re-спражѣнiе, и отличáться вездѣ (instr.) блистá-markable courage. He distinguished himself particularly тельный храбрость. Онъ отличáться особенно at the capture of a battery of the enemies. He mounted при (prep.) взятiе баттарей непрiятельскiй. Онъ взбирáться first on the parapet, killed the hostile soldier, and первый на (acc.) брустверь, убивáть непрiятельскiй солдатъ, и captured a cannon. For that he was rewarded by a взять пушка. За (acc.) éто онъ награждать (instr.) decoration. Afterwards he was rewarded also with other ордень. Потóмъ онъ награждать и (instr.) другóй marks of distinction. Now he will return to his country, отличiе. Тепѣрь онъ отправлѣться въ (acc.) родина,

will establish himself with his family, and will relate  
поселаться въ (*prep.*) свой семья, и рассказывать о (*prep.*)

his campaigns, how he marched against the Turks and  
свой походъ, какъ ходить на (*acc.*) Турокъ и  
the French, how he beat the enemy, how he induced hunger,  
Французъ, какъ бить врагъ, какъ терпѣть голодъ,

suffered from his wounds, and consoled himself with the  
страдать отъ (*gen.*) рана, и утѣшаться (*instr.*)

thought that he is serving his sovereign with heart and  
мысль, что онъ служить (*dat.*) свой Государь (*instr.*) сердце и

soul. Trust in me.  
душѣ. Уновѣть на (*acc.*) я.

#### THE PARTICIPLE.

66.—The *participles* (причастія) have, as a part of the verb (§ 53) *voice*, *aspect* and *tense*; and, as adjectives, that they may agree with their substantive, they have *gender*, *number* and *case*. As regards voice, they are *active* or *neuter* (or, with the pronoun *ся*, pronominal) and *passive*. They have the same number of aspects as the verbs whence they are derived, but they have only two tenses, the *present* and *preterit*.

Division of  
the parti-  
ciples.

67.—The *active* and *neuter* (as also the pronominal) participles are formed as follows:

Active and  
neuter par-  
ticiples.

1. The *present* participle is formed from the third person plural of the present indicative by changing the termination *тѣ* into *щій* (neut. *уще*, fem. *ущая*), and this without any exception; e. g. дѣлающій,



*making*; любящій, *loving*; кричащій, *crying*; несущій, *bearing* (from дѣлаютъ, любятъ, кричатъ, несутъ).

2. The *preterit* or past participle is formed from the preterit indicative, by changing *лѣ* into *вшій*, and *ѣ* (in such verbs as have not *лѣ* in the preterit) into *шій* (neut. *шее*, fem. *шая*); e. g. дѣлавшій, *having made*; носившій, *having borne*; поту́хшій, *being extinguished*; тёршій, *having rubbed* (from дѣлалъ, носилъ, поту́хъ, тёръ). An exception to this rule is found in some irregular verbs in *бу* and *ту*, which, though forming their preterit in *лѣ*, change *у* of the present (or of the future) into *шій*; these are: блю́дшій, *having kept*; ве́дшій, *having lead*; па́дшій (and па́вшій), *having fallen*; пряд́шій, *having spun*; плёт́шій, *having plaited*; мет́шій, *having swept*; обрѣ́тшій, *having found*; цвѣ́тшій, *having flowered* (from блю́ду, ве́ду, па́ду, пряд́у, плет́у, мет́у, обрѣ́ту and цвѣ́ту),<sup>9</sup> and also увя́дшій, *being faded*; шѣ́дшій, *having gone*; чѣ́тшій, *having counted* (from увя́ну, ид́у and чту).

Passive  
participles.

68.—The *passive* participles, which are only formed from active verbs, are used both with the full and the apocopated termination, ending: *a*) in the *present*, in *емый*, *имый* or *омый* (neut. *ое*, fem. *ая*) in the full, and in *емъ*, *имъ* or *омъ* (neut. *о*, fem. *а*) in the apocopated termination, *б*) in the *preterit*, in *нный* or *тый* (neut. *ое*, fem. *ая*) in the full, and in *нъ* or *тъ* (neut. *о*, fem. *а*) in the apocopated termination.

1. The *present* participle is formed from the first person plural of the present indicative, by chang-

ing the termination *мѣ* into *мый*, as: *дѣлаемый*, *being made*; *любимый*, *being loved* (from *дѣлаемѣ* and *любимѣ*). But *движу*, *I move*, and *борю*, *I conquer*, from *движимый* and *боримый* (instead of *движѣмый* and *борѣмый*). The irregular verbs with the first person in *ѣмѣ* (i. e. with the accent), have *омый*, resuming the guttural consonant; e. g. *зовомый*, *being called*; *трясомый*, *being shaken*; *берегомый*, *being kept*; *пекомый*, *being baked* (from *зовѣмѣ*, *трясѣмѣ*, *бережѣмѣ*, *печѣмѣ*), and in like manner *сосомый*, *being sucked*; *искомый*, *being sought* (from *сосѣмѣ* and *ищемѣ*).

2. The *preterit* participle is formed of the preterit of the indicative by changing *мѣ* of the terminations *алѣ*, *ялѣ* and *лѣ*, into *нный* with permutation of the commutable consonants or with intercalation of the consonant *л*, as also in the first person of the present; *мѣ* and *ѣ* of the terminations *олѣ*, *нулѣ* and *ѣ*, into *тый*; e. g. *дѣланный*, *done*; *разсѣянный*, *dispersed*; *видѣнный*, *seen*; *палѣнный*, *burnt*; *явлен- ный*, *shown*; *винчѣнный*, *screwed*; *колѣтый*, *pricked*; *дви- нутый*, *moved*; *тѣртый*, *rubbed* (from *дѣлалѣ*, *разсѣялѣ*, *видѣлѣ*, *палѣлѣ*, *явилѣ*, *винтилѣ*, *колѣлѣ*, *дви- нулѣ*, *тѣрѣлѣ*).

The passive participles of the irregular verbs, which also present some irregularities in their formation, have been given in the List of the irregular verbs, pages 138—141.

69.—The participles, being used as adjectives, and as such agreeing with their substantive in gender, number and case, are declined like the qualifying adjectives (§ 40, parad. 4). The active and neuter participles are only used in the full ter- Declension  
of the  
participles.

mination, while the passive participles are used both in the full and the apocopated.

Passive  
verbs

70.—The passive participles, both present and preterit, with the apocopated termination, joined to the auxiliary verb *быть*, form what is called the passive verb (страдательные глаголы); e. g. *сынъ (есть) любимъ своимъ отцемъ*, *the son is loved by his father*; *ученикъ былъ награжденъ за прилежаніе*, *the scholar has been rewarded for his assiduity*. We have here to remark that from the present and preterit of the passive participles are formed two aspects of the passive verb: the imperfect and the perfect aspect. As regards the present, preterit and future tenses, they are determined by the auxiliary verb *быть*, as seen below.

1) *Imperfect asp.*

2) *Perfect asp.*

- |                      |                       |                      |
|----------------------|-----------------------|----------------------|
| 1. <i>Present</i> :  | я (есть) награждаемъ. | я (есть) награждёнъ. |
| 2. <i>Preterit</i> : | я былъ награждаемъ.   | я былъ награждёнъ.   |
| 3. <i>Future</i> :   | я буду награждаемъ.   | я буду награждёнъ.   |

### EXERCISES ON THE PARTICIPLES.

Active and  
neuter par-  
ticiples.

The man who loves truth, hates falsehood. The child  
 Человѣкъ любить правда, ненавидѣть ложь. Дитя  
 that bathes; the dog that attacks passers by. The  
 купаться; собака бросаться на (acc.) прохожій.  
 tradesman who received the goods from London,  
 Купецъ, получать товаръ изъ (gen.) Лондонъ,  
 sold them advantageously. The tradesman who has received  
 продавать онъ выгодно. Купецъ получить  
 the goods from London, has sold them advantageously.  
 товаръ изъ (gen.) Лондонъ, продать онъ выгодно.

Suffering from illness, he seeks relief. Light  
Страда́ть (*instr.*) боле́знь, иска́ть (*gen.*) облегче́ние. Заже́чь

the candle which has gone out, and wipe the window  
свеча́ поту́хнуть, и вы́тереть сте́кло

which is frozen. Glory to the hero who has saved his  
замёрзнуть. Сла́ва геро́й спасти́ свой

country. The roaring lion, the bellowing ox, the barking  
оте́чество. Рыка́ть ле́въ, мыча́ть бы́къ, лая́ть

dog, the crowing cock, the cooing dove, express their  
соба́ка, пѣть пѣту́хъ, воркова́ть го́лубь, выража́ть свой

feelings and wants.

чу́ство и жела́ние.

The sea agitated by the winds frightens the sailors. *Passive*  
Мо́ре, волнува́ть вѣтра, у́страша́ть пла́вце́. *participles.*

The daughter beloved by her father, seeks to deserve his  
До́чь, любя́ть оте́цъ, иска́ть заслужи́вать о́нъ

love. One must succour the unfortunate man, harassed  
любо́вь. До́лжно помога́ть (*dat.*) несча́стный, гна́ть

by fate and pursued by disasters. This is skimmed milk,  
судьба́ и преслѣ́довать неуда́ча. Э́тотъ сня́ть моло́ко,

and here is rappee snuff. It is a loaded gun. In the  
и вотъ терѣ́ть таба́къ. Э́тотъ заря́дить ру́жьё. На (*prep.*)

market they sell killed geese, tarred ropes, little  
рыно́къ продава́ться бить гу́съ, смоли́ть верё́вка, откорми́ть

sucking pigs, and shorn sheep.

поро́сёнокъ и стри́чь о́вца.

Russia is inhabited by various nations. Good sovereigns *Passive*  
Росси́я обита́ть (*instr.*) мно́го наро́дъ. До́брый госуда́рь *verbs.*

are loved by their subjects and respected by their neighbours.

лю́бить свой по́дданный и уважа́ть сосѣ́дъ.

The Tartars have been vanquished and defeated in the  
Татаря́тъ побѣди́ть и разбѣ́ить на (*prep.*)

plains of Koulikof. Thy labours will be crowned with  
 поле Куликовъ. Твой трудъ увѣнчать (*instr.*)

success. Nouns are declined, and verbs conjugated. This  
 успѣхъ. Имя склоняѣтъ и глаголь сопрягаѣтъ. Сей

great captain will be revered by posterity. Moscow  
 великій полководецъ чтить въ (*prep.*) потомство. Москвѣ

has been devastated and burnt by the enemies. This gun  
 разорить и сжечь врагъ. Э тотъ ружье

is charged. This book is well bound. <sup>с</sup>  
 зарядить. Э тотъ книга прекрасно переплетѣтъ.

#### THE ADVERB AND THE GERUND.

Division of  
 the adverbs.

71.—The *adverbs* (нарѣчія) are divided into different classes according to their meaning:

1. Adverbs of *quality* or *manner* (нарѣчія качества), e. g. такъ, *thus*; иначе, *otherwise*; хорошо, *well*; худо, *badly*; нарочно, *intentionally*; скоро, *quickly*; напрасно, *in vain*; наугадъ, *at random*; заодно, *by agreement*; по-своему, *in one's own way*, &c.

2. Adverbs of *time* (времени), e. g. вчера, *yesterday*; сегодня, *to-day*; завтра, *to-morrow*; утромъ, *in the morning*; вечеромъ, *in the evening*; нынѣ, *now*; теперѣ, *at present*; тогда, *then*; послѣ, *afterwards*; прежде, *before*; иногда, *sometimes*; тотчасъ, *presently*, &c.

3. Adverbs of *place* (мѣста): *a*) such as indicate a place without motion: здѣсь, *here*; тамъ, *there*; нигдѣ, *nowhere*; дома, *at home*; вездѣ, *everywhere*; *b*) such as indicate the place to which the action

is directed: *сюда́, hither*; *туда́, thither*; *никуда́, nowhere*; *домой, home*; *всюду, everywhere*; c) such as indicate the place whence the action proceeds; e. g. *отсю́да, from here*; *отту́да, from there*; *извне́, from without*; *снару́жи, from the exterior*; *отвсю́ду, from all sides*, &c.

4. Adverbs of *order* (порядка); e. g. *во-пе́рвыхъ, firstly*; *во-вторы́хъ, secondly*; *потомъ, subsequently*, &c. •

5. Adverbs of *quantity* (ко́личества); e. g. *до-во́льно, enough*; *ма́ло, little*; *мно́го, much*; *не́сколько, some*, &c.

6. *Implicit* (замѣнительныя) adverbs, as: *да, yes*; *нѣтъ, no*; *молъ, де, says he*, &c.

7. *Interrogative* (вопросительныя) adverbs; e. g. *когда́, when?* *доко́ль, how long?* *гдѣ, where* (without motion)? *куда́, where* (with motion)? *отку́да, whence?* *ско́лько, how much?* *зачѣмъ, why?* &c.

72.—Adverbs are for the most part derivatives, being formed from nouns, adjectives, pronouns or verbs. Nouns in the instrumental and other cases are often employed adverbially: e. g. *кря́гомъ, in a circle*; *верхо́мъ, on horseback*; *да́ромъ, gratis*; *на показъ, for show*; *въ торо́пахъ, in haste*, &c. Every qualifying adjective, in the apocopated termination of the neuter gender, can become an adverb, as: *окра́сить бѣло́, синѣ, to dye white, blue*; *поступа́тъ хоро́шо, to conduct himself well*. The possessive and circumstantial adjectives form adverbs of manner by means of the preposition *по*, as: *по-человѣ́чьи, as a man*; *по-ру́сски, in Russian*;

Formation  
of the ad-  
verbs.

по-дру́жески, *as a friend*; по-звѣ́рному, *like beasts*; по-мо́ему, *according to my view*.

Degrees of  
comparison.

73.—The adverbs formed from qualifying adjectives admit of degrees of comparison; e. g. умно́, *wisely*, and умнѣ́, *more wisely*; хоро́шо, *well*, and лу́чше, *better*; по́корко, *humbly*, and всепо́корнѣ́йше, *very humbly*. We must here remark that the comparative of the adverbs is the same as that of the adjectives in the apocopated termination, with the exception of the five adverbs: бо́лѣ, *more*; ме́нѣ, *less*; до́лѣ, *longer*; да́лѣ, *further*; то́нѣ, *more finely*, which must be distinguished from the adjectives бо́льше, *greater*; ме́ньше, *less*; до́льше, *longer*; да́льше, *more distant*; то́ньше, *finer*. The qualifying adverbs can also be used in the diminutive and augmentative aspects; e. g. синева́то, *bluishly*; ма́ленько, *a little*; не́мно́жко, *not much*; поху́же, *a little worse*; преу́мно, *very wisely*.

Gerunds.

74.—The *gerunds* (дѣеприча́стія) are nothing but *verbal adverbs* formed from active or neuter participles. They have two terminations in each of the two tenses, viz: *a*) in the *present*, я or (after a hissing letter) а, and ючи or учи, e. g. дѣ́лая and дѣ́лаючи, *in doing*; ды́ша and ды́шучи, *in breathing*; не́ся and не́сучи, *in bearing*; *b*) in the *preterit*, въ and вши; e. g. дѣ́лавъ and дѣ́лавши, *after having done*; про́сѣвъ and про́сѣвши, *having prayed*, remarking however that verbs which have not the letter л in the preterit, have only the termination ши, e. g. уме́рши, *being dead*; поту́хши, *being*

*extinguished.* The same is the case with the pronominal verbs; e. g. *учившись, after having learned;* *возвратившись, having returned.*

The full terminations of the gerunds *ючи* and *ючи* are more commonly employed in familiar language, while the apocopated termination *я* and *ея* are more usual in the written tongue.

### EXERCISES ON THE ADVERBS AND THE GERUNDS.

Come here, for I live here. Where is your brother? Adverbs.

Пойти сюда, ибо я жить здесь. Где ваш брат?

He is not at home. Where did he go yesterday evening? Онъ нѣтъ дома. Куда онъ поѣхать вчера вечеромъ?

Thou judgest wisely, and thy brother judges more wisely. Ты судить умно, а твой братъ . Я

walk quick, and thou walkest quicker. You speak Russian ходить шибко, а ты . Ты говорить по-русьски

purely, and your sister speaks it more purely. To-morrow чисто, а вашъ сестрица . Завтра

we shall go very far, and in a year we shall go still я поѣхать очень далеко, а чрезъ (acc.) годъ ещё

further. Thou singest well, but she sings better. I beg . Ты пѣть хорошо, но онъ . Я просить

you very earnestly. I thank you very humbly. ты убѣдительно. Я благодарить ты покорно.

While walking on the bank of the river, I enjoy Gerunds.

Гулять на (prep.) берегъ рѣки, я наслаждаться

the freshness of the evening. While pitying the unfortunate, (instr.) прохлада вечеръ. Жалѣть о (prep.) несчастный,

try to aid them. I instruct you, because I wish стараться помогать онъ. Я учить ты, жалѣть



you well, and because I hope, that you will make progress  
ты (*gen.*) добро́, и надѣяться, что ты успѣвать

in the sciences. When thou dost not know how to do  
въ (*prep.*) нау́ка. Не уми́ть дѣлать (*gen.*)

a thing, ask advice without blushing. Do right,  
что нибу́дь, проси́ть (*gen.*) совѣтъ, не красѣть. Дѣлать добро́,

without fearing any man. One must not eat when  
не боя́ться (*gen.*) никто́. Дóлжно не ѣсть

lying down. In serving our country, and dying for  
лежа́ть. Служить (*dat.*) о́течество, и умира́ть за (*acc.*)

it, we do our duty. Having received your letter, and  
онъ, я исполна́ть свой дол́гъ. Получи́ть вашъ пи́сьмо́, и

having learned what you want, I have answered imme-  
узна́ть (*gen.*) что ты же́лать, я отвѣча́ть немé-

diately. After having dined, stop at home. Having  
мгнó. Отобѣ́дать, остава́ться до́ма. Напи-

written your letter, I placed it in an envelope, and  
са́ть пи́сьмо́, положи́ть въ (*acc.*) куве́ртъ, и

sealed it, put it in the post. Having returned  
запеча́тать, отдава́ть онъ на (*acc.*) почта́. При́йти

home, I set about writing. After being married, he repaired  
домой, я съ́сть писа́ть. Жени́ться, онъ поѣ́хать

to the country. Having remained an hour with him,  
въ (*acc.*) дере́вня. Просидѣ́ть (*acc.*) часъ у (*gen.*) онъ,

I returned home; after undressing myself and going to bed,  
я по́йти домой; раздѣ́ваться и лечь,

I fell asleep immediately.

я усну́ть скоро́.

## THE PREPOSITION.

75.—The *prepositions* (предлоги) of the Russian language are *simple* (безъ, на, по) or *compound* (изъ-за, изъ-подъ); the following is a general list of them: Division of the prepositions.

Безъ (безо), without.	Отъ (ото), from; since; out of.
Вз- or воз- (взо), up. <i>sus</i> .	По (па-), about; until; after.
Въ (во), in, into, to, at.	Подъ (подо-), under, underneath.
Вы-, out, without, <i>ex</i> .	Пра-, ( <i>indicating a removed relationship</i> ; прадѣтъ, <i>great grandfather</i> ).
Для, for.	Пре- or пере-, beyond, <i>trans</i> .; <i>re</i> .
До, as far as, until.	Предъ or передъ (предо), before.
За, behind; after; for.	При, near; in the time of.
Изъ (изо), from.	Про, of, about.
Изъ-за, from behind.	Ради, for the sake of.
Изъ-подъ, from under.	Раз- or роз- (разо), apart, <i>se</i> .
Къ (ко), to, towards; for.	Сквозъ, through.
На, on; against.	Съ (со, съ-), since; about; with.
Надъ (надо), upon, over.	Съ (со, съ-), since; about; with.
Низ- (низо-), down, <i>de</i> .	У, at; by, near. [ing.]
О or объ (обо), of; round; against.	Черезъ or черезъ, through; dur-

The following adverbs also belong to the class of prepositions:

Близъ, near.	О'коло, round; about.
Вдоль, along.	О'крестъ, around.
Вмѣсто, instead of.	Опрічь, except, excepting.
Внутрь <i>and</i> внутрі, within.	Повѣрхъ, upon, above.
Внѣ, out of, without.	Подлѣ, beside.
Возлѣ, beside.	Позади <i>and</i> позадь, behind.
Вотреки, against, in spite of.	Послѣ, after.
Кромѣ, besides, except.	Прѣжде, before.
Мѣжду or межъ, between, among.	Противъ or противу, against.
Мимо, past, by.	Сверхъ, above; besides.
Назадѣ, behind.	Сзадѣ or созадѣ, from behind.
Насупротивъ, opposite.	Средѣ <i>and</i> средь, in the middle.

Certain adverbs, formed from qualifying adjectives, are also used as prepositions; e. g. *относительно*, *in reference to*; *касательно*, *concerning*. The same is the case with certain gerunds, as: *исключая*, *excepting*; *не смотря на*, *not withstanding*, and also some nouns in different cases, as: *въ разсужденіи*, *in consideration of*; *посредствомъ*, *by means of*, &c.

76—The prepositions in every language have a twofold use. In the first place they are used, as prefixes, in the formation of the different parts of speech, of which they become an integral part; e. g. *безуміе*, *absurdity*; *взглядъ*, *look*, *западъ*, *the west*; *обольщать*, *to seduce*; *насынокъ*, *the son-in-law*; *правнукъ*, *the great-grand-son*; *сумерки*, *twilight*; *чрезвычайный*, *extraordinary*, &c. Secondly, as particles of speech, they are placed before nouns and pronouns to indicate the relations of the objects; e. g. *человѣкъ безъ ума*, *a man without talent*; *про́сьба до судьи*, *a request to the judge*; *письмо́ къ другу*, *a letter to a friend*; *сказка о лиси́цѣ*, *the tale of the fox*, &c.

These examples show that some prepositions are used conjointly and separately, while others of them can only be employed in one of these ways. Such as are only used *separately*, are: *для*, *къ* (*ко*), *ради*, *сквозь*, *изъ-за́* and *изъ-по́дъ*. Such as are only used *conjointly*, are: *въ* (*воз*, *взо*), *вы*, *ни́з* (*низо*), *па*, *пра*, *пре* (*пере*), *раз* (*роз*, *разо*) and *су*, and for this reason are called *inseparable* prepositions. All the other prepositions may be used both conjointly and separately.

77.—The separable prepositions require the complementary word to be put in a certain case. Thus: Government of the prepositions.

Безъ, для, до, изъ, изъ-за, изъ-подъ, отъ, рѣди and у, as well as almost all the adverbs used prepositionally, require the *genitive*.

Къ and the adverb вопреки require the *dative*.

Про, сквозь and чрезъ govern the *accusative*.

Надъ requires the *instrumental*, as does also the adverb между or межъ, though used occasionally with the *genitive*.

При governs the *prepositional*.

За, подъ and предъ require the *accusative*, when they indicate motion towards an object, and the *instrumental* when they design repose.

Въ, на and о or объ govern the *accusative*, when they indicate a change of place, and the *prepositional*, when there is no motion indicated from one place to another.

Съ governs the *genitive*, the *accusative* and the *instrumental*. With the *genitive* it means *from*, *since*; with the *accusative*, *as*, *about*, *of the size of*, and with the *instrumental*, *with*.

По requires the *dative*, the *accusative* and the *prepositional*. With the *dative* it signifies *about*; with the *accusative*, *as far as*, and with the *prepositional*, *after*.

#### • EXERCISES ON THE PREPOSITIONS.

Without hope it is impossible to live in the world. From  
 Безъ надежда нельзя жить въ свѣтъ. Отъ  
 the river to the forest there are two versts. Of what are you  
 до лѣсъ (есть) два верста. О что ты

talking? We labour for the public good. Between the  
говорить? Я трудиться для общій благо. Между  
house and the garden there is a large court with stables.  
домъ и садъ (есть) пространный дворъ съ конюшня.  
For God's sake do not grieve. The love of the sovereign  
Ради Бога не унывать. Любовь къ государь  
and of one's native land. He lives at his uncle. The soldier  
и отечество. Онъ жить у свой дядя. Солдатъ  
started from behind the bush. The ray of the sun passes  
выскочить изъ-за кустъ. Лучъ солнечный проникать  
through the water. This man is at death's door.  
сквозь вода. Этотъ человекъ (есть) при смерти.  
The bird flies under the clouds. I have put the book under  
Птица летать подъ облако. Я положить книга подъ  
the table. Sit down to table and remain at table. My  
столъ. Садиться за столъ и сидеть за столъ. Мой  
brother starts for Moscow, because his wife lives at  
братъ ехать въ Москвѣ, потому что онъ женѣ жить въ  
Moscow. The eagle is perched on the tree. This glass  
Москвѣ. Орёлъ сидеть на дерево. Этотъ рюмка  
has been broken into several pieces. I am angry with my  
разбиваться на мелкій часть. Я досадовать на мой  
brother for his laziness. Never mind the affairs of others.  
братъ за онъ лѣность. Не заботиться о дѣло чужой.  
My friend has wounded himself against the corner of the table.  
Мой другъ ушибаться объ уголъ столъ.  
The water runs from the roof. Here are trees with leaves,  
Вода течь съ кровля. Вотъ дерево съ 'листь,  
but without blossoms. This dog will be of the size of  
но безъ цвѣтъ. Этотъ собака быть съ  
a cow. The children run about the court and about the  
корова. Дитя бѣгать по дворъ и по

garden. We worked from the first to the fifth of August.  
садъ. Я рабѣтать отъ пѣрвый по пѣтый числѣ А'вгустъ.

He wears mourning for his brother.

Онъ носѣтъ трауръ по свой братъ.

## THE CONJUNCTION.

78.—The following is a general list of the Russian *conjunctions* (союзы).

А, and; but.	Не то́лько . . . но, и, not only
Буде, if, provided.	. . . . . but even.
Будто, будто бы, that, as if.	Нежели, than.
Впрѣчемъ, as for the rest.	Ни, ни́же, neither, nor; not
Да, and, but; let.	Но, but. [even.
Дабы, that, in order that.	Одна́ко, however.
Для того́ что, because.	Посему́, then.
Ежели <i>and</i> е́сли, if, in case,	Потому́ что, because.
when.	Пра́вда, it is true.
Же <i>or</i> жъ, then, also.	Пуска́й <i>or</i> пусть, let.
И, and; also, too.	Сколь ни, whatever.
Ибо, because.	Слѣдовательно, consequently,
Или <i>or</i> иль, or.	То, then. [then.
И такъ, therefore.	Того́ ра́ди, therefore.
Какъ, as, when.	То́лько <i>and</i> то́кмо, only, merely.
Ка́къ-то, for instance.	Хотя, though, although.
Когда́, when, whenever.	Хотя бы, even though.
Ли <i>or</i> ль ( <i>interrogative</i> ); if,	Что, that.
whether.	Чтобы́ <i>or</i> что́бъ, that, in order
Либо, either, or.	that.
Лишь, just, as soon as.	Чѣмъ, than.

There are other parts of speech which perform the office of conjunctions; such are the relative pronouns: кто, что, кото́рый, кой, *who, which*; чей, *whose*; како́й, *which*; the interrogative adverbs: гдѣ, куда́, *where*; отку́да, *whence*; доко́ль, *how long*; ско́лько, сколь, *how much*; and others: такъ,

*thus; пока́, as much as; тѣмъ . . . чѣмъ, so much the more . . . that; чѣмъ . . . тѣмъ, the more . . . the more; частью, in part, &c.*

### EXERCISES ON THE CONJUNCTIONS.

My uncle was born and lived at Moscow, and not at Tver.

Мой дѣдя родиться и жить въ Москвѣ, а не въ Тверь.

Do you know that our tutor is indisposed? If you do  
Знать ли что нашъ учитель нездоровый? Ежели ты

not come I shall be angry. Ask <sup>6</sup> him if he  
не прѣзжать, то я осердиться. Спросить у онъ, ли онъ

will come, or if he has the intention to stop at home. Не  
хотѣть ѣхать, или вознамѣриться оставаться дома. Онъ

distresses himself more about his brother than about his sister.

забѣдниться болѣе о братъ, нежели о сестра.

It is more agreeable to do good to others, than to receive

Пріятно дѣлать добро другой, чѣмъ получать

benefits one's self. Let him come; let them go.

благотвореніе самъ. Пусть онъ прійти; пускай онъ уѣхать.

Do not let the sun find you on your bed. Long live

Не да солнце заставать ты на ложѣ. Да здравствовать

the Tzar. The more thou learnest diligently, the more study will

Царь. Чѣмъ ты учишься прилѣжно, тѣмъ ученіе быть

be easy to thee.

лёгкій для ты.

### THE INTERJECTION.

79.—The principal *interjections* (междомѣтія) of the Russian language are the following: ура! га! expressing *joy*; ахъ! охъ! увы! ахтѣ! expressive of *pain*; ай! ухъ! ой! indicate *fear*; тоу! indicates *aversion*; уфъ! expresses *fatigue*; ну! нѣже! are used to *encourage*; стъ! тсъ! to impose *silence*; ай! рей! to *call*.

## SECOND PART

## SYNTAX.

80.—*Syntax*, which treats of the union of the different elements of speech, and of the order in which those different elements ought to be arranged, is divided into three parts: 1) the *concord* of words (согласованіе), or the syntax of agreement, which teaches how to express the union existing between the words forming the proposition; 2) the *dependence* of words (управлѣніе), or the syntax of government, which teaches the manner of indicating the relation existing between a term and its antecedent; and 3) the *construction* of words (размѣщеніе), or the place to be assigned to the single words in the proposition, and to the propositions in the period.

Division of  
Syntax

## CONCORD OF WORDS.

81.—The following are the rules of the concord of words in the Russian language:

1. The *subject* (подлежащее), *attribute* (сказуемое) and *copula* (связка) must agree in gender, number and person; e. g.: Божъ есть всемогущъ, *God is almighty*; науки (суть) полезны, *the sciences are useful*; Москва была славна, *Moscow has been celebrated*; Азія будетъ спокойна, *Asia will be tranquil*; солнце взошло, *the sun has risen*. — When the attribute is a noun, it retains its gender and number; as: орёлъ есть хищная птица, *the eagle*



*is a bird of prey*; but the movable nouns agree with the subject; as: *луна́ есть спутница́ земли́, the moon is the satellite of the earth.*

To this rule there are the following exceptions: 1) The personal pronoun of the 2d person, with its determinatives, as also the verb and the attribute when an adjective is used, from politeness, in the *plural* instead of the singular; but when the attribute is a noun, it remains in the singular; e. g. *вы сами́, другъ мой, нездоровы́, you yourself, my friend, are indisposed; будьте свидѣтелями́, be a witness.* — 2) The verb *быть*, in the sense of *exist*, though the subject be plural, remains in the *singular* in the 3d person of the present; but in the preterit and future it agrees in number with its subject; e. g. *у него́ есть деньги́, he has money; у него́ были́ деньги́, he had money; у него́ будутъ деньги́, he will have money.* — 2) In the case of nouns indicating a title, the verb and the attribute agree in gender with the sex of the person who bears the title; as: *Его́ Величество́ (Король) нездоровъ, His Majesty (the King) is indisposed; Ея́ Сіятельство́ (Графиня́) была́ здѣсь, Her Excellency (the Countess) has been here; Его́ Свѣтлость́ (Князь) прогуливался́, His Highness (the Prince) has taken a walk.*

2. Determinative words agree with the noun they determine, in *gender, number and case*; e. g. *Великій Петръ преобразовалъ обширную Россію, Peter the Great has regenerated the vast Russian empire.* If the determinative is a noun, it only agrees in *case*; e. g. *слёзы, утѣшеніе несчастныхъ, у него́ изсякли, tears, the consolation of the unhappy, were dried up within him.*

3. Two or more subjects in the singular require the verb and the attribute in the *plural*; e. g. *лѣность и прѣздность (суть) вредны́, laziness and inactivity are pernicious.* If the two nouns in the singular are united by an alternative conjunction,

the verb and the attribute must be in the *singular*; e. g. зима́ или весна́ тебѣ́ пріятна? *is it winter or spring that is agreeable to thee?*

4. The infinitive, when it performs the office of subject, requires the verb and the attribute to be put in the *neuter singular*; this is also the case with the adverbs много́, *much*; ма́ло, *little*; ско́лько, *how much*; нѣско́лько, *some*; e. g. умира́тъ за отѣчество (есть) сла́вно и пріятно, *it is noble and pleasant to die for one's country*; ско́лько пришло́ семе́йствъ, *how many families have arrived?*

5. When two nouns, the one appellative and the other proper, both relating to the same object, differ in number or gender, the adjective or verb agrees with the *appellative* noun; e. g. дре́вній го́родъ О́йвы, *the ancient city of Thebes*; сла́вная рѣ́ка Дуна́й, *the celebrated river Danube*. When there are two nouns of different genders, the adjective agrees with the *masculine*; e. g. сла́вные ца́ри и ца́рицы, *the celebrated kings and queens*. In the verbs the first person has the priority over the two others, and the second over the third; as: ты и я гу́ляемъ вмѣстѣ, *thou and I walk together*; ты и онъ не зна́ете что дѣ́лать, *thou and he know not what to do*.

6. The numerals compounded of о́динъ, *one*, require the noun in the *singular* (§ 43); e. g. два́дцать о́динъ ру́бль, *twenty one rubles*; ты́сяча о́дна́ ночь, *the thousand and one nights*.

7. The relative pronouns agree in *gender* and *number* with the noun to which they relate, but they take the *case* that the verb of the phrase in which

they occur, may require; e. g. я знаю дѣло, о которомъ вы говорите, *I know the affair of which you speak*. The pronoun *чей*, occurring always with a noun, must agree in every respect with that noun; e. g. тотъ, въ чьихъ рукахъ моя судьба, *he in whose hands is my destiny*.

### EXERCISES ON THE CONCORD OF WORDS.

Winter is agreeable. Men are mortal. Novgorod was  
Зима пріятный. Человѣкъ смѣртный. Новгородъ быть  
rich. Russia is a vast empire. The Wolga is the king  
богатый. Россія быть обширный имперія. Волга быть царь  
of the rivers of Russia. My friend, you shall be satisfied.  
рѣка рѣсскій. Мой пріятель, ты быть довольный.

We have great stores. I shall have to-morrow some  
У я быть большой запасъ. У я быть завтра

money. Her Majesty (*the Empress*) is gone out. His  
дѣньги. Онъ Величество (*Императрица*) выѣхать. Онъ

Excellency (*the general*) is gone. His Imperial  
Превосходительство (*генералъ*) уѣхать. Онъ Императорскій

Highness (*the Grand-Duke*) has been satisfied. Geography  
Высочество (*Великій Князь*) быть довольный. Географія

and history are very useful branches of knowledge.  
и исторія быть весьма полезный знаніе.

It is difficult to be silent. How many children were there?  
Трудный молчать. Сколько дѣтѣ быть тамъ?

Moscow is celebrated; the town of Moscow is celebrated.  
Москва знаменитый; городъ .

China is densely peopled; the empire of China is densely  
Китай многолюдный; государство

4 peopled. He has thirty one horses. The book  
У ОНЪ БЫТЬ ТРИДЦАТЬ ОДИНЪ ЛОШАДЬ. Книга,

which you are reading, is very amusing. Here is  
КОТОРЫЙ ТЫ ЧИТАТЬ, ОЧЕНЬ ЗАБАВНЫЙ. Вотъ

the man by whose works we profit.  
ЧЕЛОВѢКЪ, (instr.) ЧЕЙ ТРУДЪ ПОЛЬЗОВАТЬСЯ

## DEPENDENCE OF WORDS.

82.—For the *dependence* or government of words in Russian the following rules are to be observed:

1. Words which, having the same root, appear in the form of substantive, adjective or adverb, as also in the form of verb, participle of gerund, require the same cases; e. g. **вредить** ближнему, *to do harm to his neighbour*; **вредящій** ближнему, *doing harm to his neighbour*; **вредя** ближнему, *in doing harm to his neighbour*; **вредъ** ближнему, *the harm done to his neighbour*; **вредный** ближнему, *prejudicial to his neighbour*; **вредно** ближнему, *prejudicially to his neighbour*.

2. The governing power of the verbs depends on their meaning: the same verb used in different significations requires different cases; e. g. **говорить** правду, *to speak the truth*; **говорить** о дѣлѣ, *to speak of an affair*; **говорить** языкомъ, *to speak a language*; **говорить** съ другомъ, *to speak with a friend*; **отказать** просителю, *to refuse a petitioner*; **отказать** въ просьбѣ, *to refuse a request*, **отказать** домъ, *to bequeath a house*; **отказать** отъ должности, *to deprive of an office*.

3. The prepositions communicate to the verbs to which they are joined a double quality. In the first place they express simply the commencement of the action, its duration and its completion; as: **игралъ** на флѣйтѣ, *he played on the flute*; **заигралъ** на флѣйтѣ, *he began to play on the flute*; **поигравъ** на флѣйтѣ, **занялся** онъ чтеніемъ, *after having played a little on the flute, he busied himself with reading*; **вчера сыгралъ** на флѣйтѣ претрудное сочиненіе, *yesterday he played on the flute a very difficult composition*; онъ **доигралъ** на флѣйтѣ начатое на скрипкѣ,

*he finished playing on the flute what he had begun on the violin; отыгралъ на флейтѣ въ полночь, he ceased playing on the flute at midnight.* Secondly the preposition gives to the verb another meaning; e. g. писать писемѡ, *to write a letter*; описать хвалу, *to confer praises upon*; вписать въ книгу, *to inscribe in the book*; выписать изъ книги, *to extract from a book*; записать въ службу, *to enter on the service*; надписать адресъ, *to write an address*; отписать къ другу, *to inform a friend*; переписать нѣбѣло, *to make a fair copy*; приписать строчку, *to add a line*; прописать всю службу, *to describe the whole service*; расписать комнату, *to paint a room*; списаться съ пріятелемъ, *to correspond with a friend.* The prepositional verbs of the first mentioned class require after them the same preposition and the same case as in the simple form, while those of the second category, in which the addition of a preposition modifies the sense, take after them the preposition with which they are formed, or a corresponding one, as is seen below.

Verbs formed with the preposition { require after them the preposition	возврѣзъ,	на; e. g. войти на гору, <i>to ascend the mountain.</i>
	во вѡ,	въ; . . . вступать въ домъ, <i>to enter in the house.</i>
	вы,	изъ; . . . выйти изъ лѣсу, <i>to issue from the forest.</i>
	до, . .	до; . . . доѣхать до города, <i>to go as far as the town.</i>
	за, . .	за; . . . закинуть за спину, <i>to throw behind one's self.</i>
	изъ, . .	изъ; . . . извлечь изъ книги, <i>to extract from a book.</i>
	на, . .	на; . . . навьючить на лошадь, <i>to place upon a horse.</i>
	надъ, . .	надъ; . . . надсматривать надъ дѣтми, <i>to watch over the children.</i>
	низъ, . .	съ; . . . низлетѣть съ кровля, <i>to fly down from the roof</i>
	отъ, . .	отъ; . . . оторвать отъ работы, <i>to tear from labour.</i>
	пере, . .	чрезъ; . . . перескочить чрезъ ровъ, <i>to leap across a ditch.</i>
	подъ, . .	подъ; . . . положить подъ голову, <i>to put under his head.</i>
	предъ, . .	предъ; . . . предстать предъ судей, <i>to present himself before the judges.</i>
	примъ, . .	къ; . . . . . къ другу, <i>to come to a friend.</i>
	про, . .	сквозъ; . . . пройти сквозь огонь, <i>to pass through the fire.</i>
	произъ, . .	отъ; . . . произойти отъ болѣзни, <i>to arise from a disease.</i>
разъ, . .	на; . .	разрѣзать на части, <i>to cut into pieces.</i>
	съ, . .	скинуть съ себя, <i>to throw of one's self.</i>
с or со,		

83.—We now give the application of these rules in every case, with the exceptions thereto.

**Nominative.** In the *nominative* are put: 1) The subject, or the principal member of the proposition; as: солнце свѣтитъ, *the sun shines*; море шумитъ, *the sea*

*roars.* (The subject with a negative verb is sometimes put in the *genitive*; see below.)—2) The attribute, united to the subject by means of the verb *есть*, *былъ* or *буду*, when it expresses a permanent quality of the subject; as: орёлъ есть птица, *the eagle is a bird*; Адамъ былъ человекъ, *Adam was a man*. The adjective in this occasion is used in the apocopated termination; as: Богъ есть всемогущъ, *God is almighty*; Славяне были храбры, *the Slavonians were brave*. If the attribute does not express some permanent quality of the subject, but only a transitory one and of short duration, it is then put in the *instrumental*; as: мой братъ былъ въ то время кадѣтомъ, *my brother was at that time a cadet*; онъ скоро будетъ генераломъ, *he will soon be a general*. This exception however occurs only with the preterit and the future, never with the present.

In the *vocative* is put the name or denomination Vocative. of the person addressed; e. g. Боже, спаси Царя! *God, save the Tzar!* Господи, помилуй меня! *Lord, have mercy upon me!*

The *accusative* is used: 1) After the active verbs; Accusative. as: птица пьётъ воду, *the bird drinks the water*; я погасилъ свѣчу, *I have put out the candle*; мой сосѣдъ купилъ домъ, *my neighbour has bought a house*. The verbal nouns, formed from these verbs, require the *genitive*; as: питьё воды, *the drinking of the water*; погашеніе свѣчъ, *the putting out of the candle*; покупка дома, *the purchase of a house*. —2) To indicate the duration of an action for a given time or over a given distance; as: я писалъ

всю ночь, *I have written the whole night*; онъ проѣхалъ версту, *he has run a verst*.—3) After the prepositions *въ, на, за, подъ, предъ, про, сквозь, чрезъ, о* or *объ, по* and *съ* (§ 77).

**Dative** The *dative* is used: 1) With the accusative, to indicate the person to whose gain or loss the action is performed; e. g. ты подалъ милостыню бѣдному, *thou hast given alms to the poor man*.—2) After the verbs formed with the prepositions *предъ* and *со* (in a sense of reciprocity), or with the adverbs *блѣго, противъ* and *прѣко*; as: осень предшествуетъ зимѣ, *autumn precedes winter*; не прекословь старшимъ, *do not contradict the aged*.—3) After the verbs expressing command or prohibition, pleasure or grief, compliance or opposition, assistance or obstacle; e. g. мы подражаемъ древнимъ, *we imitate the ancients*; не льсти богатымъ, *do not flatter the rich*; служи усердно Государю, *serve the sovereign with zeal*. The verbal nouns formed from these verbs also require the dative; as: подражаніе древнимъ, *the imitation of the ancients*; лесть богатымъ, *flattery to the rich*.—4) After such verbs as are used in the infinitive instead of the future; as: быть бѣдѣ, *there will be a misfortune*; не видать намъ ясныхъ дней, *we shall see no more fine days*.—5) With the impersonal verbs; as: мнѣ хочется ѣсть, *I want to eat*; вамъ нездоровится, *you are indisposed*.—6) With such adjectives and adverbs as are derived from the above mentioned verbs, or which express advantage or detriment, utility or uselessness, pleasure or dislike; e. g. приятный слуху, *agreeable to the ear*; жить при-

лично своему состоянию, *to live suitably to one's condition*.—7) After the prepositions *кз* and *но*, and the adverb *вопреки* (§ 77).

The *instrumental* is used: 1) With the active, <sup>Instru-</sup>neuter, pronominal and passive verbs, <sup>mental.</sup> a) to designate the instrument, the means by which the action is performed; as: онъ берётъ книгу руками, *he takes the book with the hands*; я моюсь водою, *I wash myself with water*; книга написана моимъ учителемъ, *the book has been written by my master*; б) to designate the name, surname or quality given to an object; as: его зовутъ Иваномъ, *they call him John*; тебя почитаютъ умнымъ, *you are considered intelligent*. Some active verbs expressing motion, which usually govern the accusative, are also found with the instrumental; as: бросать камень and бросать камнемъ, *to throw a stone*; двигать сердца and сердца́ми, *to move the hearts*.—2) With the verb *быть* and *быва́ть*, to designate a quality; as: онъ хочетъ быть любимымъ, *he desires to be loved*; не быва́ть тебѣ воиномъ, *thou wilt not be a warrior*. (See above the nominative).—3) After such verbs as indicate contempt, indignation, esteem, possession, sacrifice, &c.; as: пренебрега́ть опасностью, *to despise danger*; владе́ть имѣниемъ, *to possess a property*; жертвовать собою, *to sacrifice one's self*. The verbal nouns formed from such verbs also require the instrumental; as: пренебреже́ние опасностью, *the contempt of danger*; владе́ние имѣниемъ, *the possession of a property*.—4) To designate that part of an object which is distinguished by some particular quality; as: лице́мъ



*white in the face; широкъ плечами, broad in the shoulders.*—5) To indicate the road an object takes; and also to designate the seasons and the parts of the day; as: *плыть моремъ, to go by sea; весною сѣютъ, one sows in spring; ночью спятъ, one sleeps at night.*—6) After the prepositions *за, надъ, подъ, предъ, съ,* and the adverb *между* or *межъ* (§ 77).

**Genitive** The *genitive* is used: 1) With nouns to indicate that one object is the property of another, and also its origin, &c.; as: *хозяинъ дома, the master of the house; домъ сосѣда, the house of the neighbour; сынъ солдата, the son of a soldier.* The complementary noun in such occasions may be converted into a possessive adjective; as: *домовый хозяинъ, сосѣдний домъ, солдатскій сынъ.* The dative may sometimes be substituted for this genitive; as: *другъ брату, the friend of the brother; цѣна мѣстамъ, the price of the places.* A noun with a qualifying adjective indicates in the genitive the quality of the object in a higher degree; as: *чай лучшаго сорта, a tea of superior quality; человекъ строгихъ правилъ, a man of rigid principles.*—2) With the verbal nouns, formed from active verbs governing the accusative; e. g. *чтѣнiе книги, the reading of a book; знанiе дѣла, the knowledge of an affair.*—3) To designate number, weight, measure, and in general after adverbs of quantity; as: *пудъ сѣна, a pood of hay; аршинъ сукна, an ell of cloth; нѣсколько книгъ, some books.*—4) To designate the years, the months and the day of the month; as: *шестаго января тысяча восемьсотъ*

четырнадцатого года, *January 6th 1814.*—5) After active verbs preceded by the negative adverb *не*, and with the impersonal negative verbs *нѣтъ, не стало, не слышно, не имѣется*, and others indicating privation; e. g. *не люблю невѣжды, I do not like the ignorant; не вижу пользы, I do not see the advantage; у насъ нѣтъ хлѣба, we have no bread; когда меня не будетъ, when I shall be no more; не видно переменъ, one sees no change.*—6) With the active verbs, when the action extends only to a part of the object, or lasts only a limited time; e. g. *принеси воды, bring me some water; дай мнѣ перо, give me your pen for a little while.* The same is the case with some verbs formed with the prepositions *на* and *по*, as: *наудить рыбы, to catch some fish; покосить травы, to mow some grass.*—7) With such active and pronominal verbs as express desire, expectation, disobedience, fear, privation, &c.; e. g. *желаемъ счастья, we desire health; онъ ждетъ разсвѣта, he awaits daybreak; бояться дневнаго свѣта, to fear the light of day; держаться правилъ чести, to keep to principles of honour.* The verbal nouns formed from these verbs also require the genitive; as: *желаніе славы, the desire of glory; лишеніе имѣнія, the loss of a property.*—8) After the adjectives *достойный, worthy; полный, full; чуждый, a stranger to;* and the adverb *жаль, it is a pity;* e. g. *я чуждъ сего мнѣнія, I am a stranger to this opinion; жаль ему брата, he is sorry for his brother.*—9) After adjectives and adverbs in the comparative, when not followed by a conjunction; e. g. *сокровища драгоценнѣйшія*

зѳлота, *treasures more precious than gold*; слонѳ въше верблюда, *the elephant is larger than the camel*; онѳ жилѳ долѳе всѳхѳ, *he has lived longer than all.*—10) After the prepositions безѳ, для, до, изѳ, изѳ-здѳ, изѳ-подѳ, отѳ, рѳди, съ and у, as also after most of the adverbs used as prepositions (§ 77), remarking that the prepositions для and рѳди are sometimes placed after their complement; as: для Бѳга and Бѳга для, *for God's sake*; рѳди чѳсти and чѳсти рѳди, *for honour*.

Lastly the *genitive* is used with the numerals. See the particular rules relative to the numerals § 43.

Preposi-  
tional.

The *prepositional* case is only used with the prepositions въ, на, о or обѳ, no and при (§ 77).

#### EXERCISES ON THE DEPENDENCE OF WORDS.

**Nominative** Water is an element. Alexander of Macedon was a great captain. The Tatars were ferocious. My grand-father

Вода быть стихія. Александрѳ Македонскій быть великій полководецѳ. Татаринѳ быть свирѳпый. Мой дѳдѳ

was an officer; my grand-father was then an officer. It is said

быть офицерѳ; тогда . Говорить

that the comets have been or will be once planets.

что комѳта быть или быть ещѳ планѳта.

**Accusative** The rain refreshes the earth. Rogues hate honest

Дождѳ освѳжать земля. Злодѳй ненавидѳть чѳстѳый

men. The storm which devastated our fields, has ruined

люди. Бѳря, опустошѳть нашѳ полѳ, разорѳть

many peasants. Speak always the truth. My brother has

многіе посѳлянинѳ. Говорить всегда правда. Мой братѳ быть

been sick all winter. I have been a whole verst, on horseback.  
 больной весь зима. Я ѣхать целый верста верхомъ.

Thou art praised for thy assiduity. He struck himself against  
 Ты хвалить за прилежаніе. Онъ удариться объ  
 the wall. We are in the water up to the neck. The son  
 стѣна. Я сидѣть въ вода по шея. Сынъ

is the size of the father, and the daughter almost the size of  
 ростъ съ отѣцъ, и дочь почти съ  
 the mother.

мать.

The miser prefers money to glory, and the warrior Dauve.

Скупѣцъ предпочитать деньги слава, и воинъ

prefers glory to money. The lightning precedes the  
 слава деньги. Молнія предшествовать

thunder. I admire your patience. Do these pictures  
 громъ. Дивиться вашъ терпѣніе. Этотъ картина

please you? Do not avenge thyself on thy enemy,  
 нравиться ли ты? Не мстить твой непріятель,

and do good to him who has offended thee. There will  
 и дѣлать доброе обижать ты. Быть

be a prodigy. Bitter tears will be shed. The child wishes  
 чудо. Горькій слеза литься. Ребѣнокъ хотѣться

to drink. It is not proper for a strong man to offend  
 пить. Не приличный сильный человекъ обижать

the weak. The imitation of Jesus Christ. The love of  
 слабый. Подражаніе Иисусъ Христосъ. Любовь къ

virtue and the hatred of vice.

добродѣтель и ненависть къ пороку.

I see with the eyes, I touch with the hands, I hear with Instru-  
 Видѣть глазъ, осязать рука, слышать mental.

the ears, I smell with the nose, I taste with the tongue.

ухо, обонять носъ, вкушать языкъ.

Ismail was taken by Souvorof, and Otchakow by Potemkin.  
Измайль взятъ . Суворовъ, и Очаковъ Потёмкинъ.

Every body calls these officers heroes. The patient moves  
Весь называть этотъ офицеръ герой. Больной шевелить  
scarcely the lips. I detest fraud and falsehood. Here  
едва губа. Гнушаться обманъ и ложь. Здѣсь

one breathes a pure air. The sacrifice of one's life for  
дышать чистый воздухъ. Пожертвованіе жизнь за

his sovereign and country. He is kind in heart, but weak  
Государь и отечество. Онъ добрый сердце, но слабый

in head. One must rise in the morning, work during  
голова. Надобно вставать утро, работать

the day, rest in the evening and sleep during the night.  
день, отдыхать вечеръ, и спать ночь.

Reconcile my friend with his uncle. I congratulate you on  
Помирить мой другъ съ онъ дядя. Поздравлять ты съ

your success.

вашъ успѣхъ.

Genitive. The son of my faithful friend departed yesterday. Quick-  
Сынъ мой искренній другъ уѣзжать вчера. Большой

attended children are often delicate. There has been made  
умъ дитя бывать нередко хилый. Составлять

a list of the officers of our division. The baking of bread.  
списокъ офицеръ нашъ дивизія. Печеніе хлебъ.

I have bought a pound of tea and a cord of wood. Such  
Я купить фунтъ чай и сажень дрова. Столько

labour and pains have been lost uselessly. The Russians  
трудъ и забота пропадать по-пустому. Русскій

took Paris March 18th 1814. I do not eat bread, but  
брать Парижъ мартъ 18 1814. Я не есть хлебъ, но

I drink water. I eat the bread, but I do not drink the water.  
пить вода. Я есть хлебъ, но не пить вода.

I have received neither letter nor packet. In this letter there  
Я получа́ть не ни пи́сьмо, ни посылка. Въ э́тот пи́сьмо́ бы́ть

is not a fault. Procure me money. The warriors wish

ни оди́нь оши́бка. Достава́ть я де́ньги. Вои́нь же́лать

for the battle and seek glory. The ambitious man thirsts for

би́тва и и́скать сла́ва. Славолю́бець жа́ждать

honours. Thou desirest riches, and thou fearest labour.

по́честъ. Ты хо́теть бога́тство, и бо́аться тру́дъ.

The barrel is full of wine. A worthy man is a stranger to hatred

Бо́чка по́лный ви́но. До́брый че́ловѣкъ чу́ждый зло́ба

and envy. Gold is dearer than silver; lead is heavier

и за́вистъ. Зо́лото доро́гой серебро́; сви́нецъ тя́желый

than iron. He asks alms for Christ's sake. Rest is

же́лѣзо. Онъ про́сить ми́лостыня Христо́съ ра́ди. О́тдыхъ

agreeable after labour. Along this shore runs a chain

п́риятный по́сля рабо́та. Вдо́ль э́тот бе́регъ тяну́ться цѣ́пь

of mountains. The wolves prowl round the villages.

гора́. Во́лкъ броди́ть о́коло дере́вня.

My brother preserves his presence of mind in all the

Мой бра́тъ храни́ть прису́тствіе ду́хъ при ве́сь

Preposi-  
tional.

troubles of life. This town is built on the precipitous

пеп́риятность въ жи́знь. Сей го́родъ по́строить на круто́й

bank of a rapid river. A church with five cupolas. He

бе́регъ бы́стрый рѣ́ка. Це́рковь о па́ть гла́ва. Онъ

weeps over his father.

пла́кать по сво́й о́тець.

#### THE FAIRY.

#### Волѣ́бница.

The differ-  
ent rules of  
Syntax.

A widow had two daughters: the elder resembled

Оди́нь вдово́ имѣ́ть два до́чь: ста́рый бы́ть похо́жий на

her mother both in face and temper, that is to say, she was

сво́й ма́ть и ли́цѣ и нра́въ, то е́сть, онъ бы́ть

as ugly and as malicious as her mother. Nobody такъ же дурной и такъ же злой, какъ онъ мать. Никто loved them; every one avoided them. The younger was не любить онъ; весь бѣгать отъ онъ. Малый же быть beautiful and good. Every one loved her. But her прекрасный и добродушный. Весь любить онъ. Но онъ malicious mother and her wicked sister detested her; злый мать и злая сестра ненавидѣть онъ; they scolded her without ceasing; she alone was obliged бранить безпрестанно; онъ одинъ быть должный to work in the house, to heat the stove, to sweep the rooms, работать въ домъ, топить печь, мести горница, to cook. The poor child wept from morning till стряпать въ кухню. Бѣдняжка плакать съ утро до night, but she was not lazy at her work; she was вечеръ, но онъ не лѣниться работать; быть obedient, patient, and all that was in vain, for послушный, терпѣливый, и весь этотъ быть напрасный, ибо she could in no way satisfy her wicked mother and мочь не ничто угодать на своей злой мать . и на her wicked sister. своей злой сестра.

Every day this poor girl was forced to go with Ежедневно этотъ бѣдный дѣвушка быть должный ходить съ a large pitcher to fetch water in a neighbouring wood, большой кувшинъ за вода въ ближній роща, where there was a clear spring. One day she въ который находится чистый источникъ. Однажды онъ had gone according to custom to this spring. The day пойти по обыкновеніе къ этотъ источникъ. День was very hot. After having filled her pitcher with water, быть очень жаркій. Наполнить кувшинъ вода,

she returned home. All at once she saw before her  
онъ возвращаться домой. Вдругъ видѣть предъ себя  
an old woman. "My child!" said to her the old woman,  
старушка. «Мой дитя!» скáзывать онъ старушка,  
"give me water to drink; I am wearied; I am very hot." —  
«давать я напиваться; я уставать; я (быть) жаркій.» —  
"With pleasure, good mother", said the young girl, "here  
«Съ охота, бабушка», скáзывать дѣвушка, «вотъ!  
drink." And she presented the pitcher to the poor woman.  
напиваться.» И онъ подавать кувшинъ старушка.

The old woman sat down on the grass from weariness, and  
Старушка садиться на траву отъ слабость, а  
the young girl kneeled down before her, and  
молодой красавица становиться на колѣно передъ онъ, и

held gently the pitcher, while she drank.  
поддѣрживать осторожно кувшинъ, пока онъ пить вода.

"I thank thee, my dear!" said the old woman after  
«Благодарить ты, милый!» скáзывать старушка,

having drunk. "I see that thou art a good, an amiable  
напиваться. «Видѣть, что ты (есть) добрый, ласковый  
child, and I wish to reward thee for thy kindness.  
дитя, и хотѣть награждать ты за твой услужливость.

Know then that I am a fairy, and that I took pur-  
Знать же, я волшебница, и взять на себя на-  
posely the form of an old woman to put thee to the proof.  
рочно видѣ старушка, чтобы ты испытывать.

I am delighted that thou art so good, and this is what  
Рáдоваться, что ты (есть) такой добрый, и вотъ, что  
I will do for thee: every time that thou shalt pronounce  
хотѣть сдѣлать для ты: всякій разъ, что ты скáзывать

a word, there shall issue from thy mouth either a pretty  
слово, выпада́ть изъ у ты ротъ или прекрасный



flower, or a precious stone, or a large pearl.  
цвѣтокъ, или драгоценный камень, или большой жемчужина.

Farewell, my little friend." And the fairy disappeared.

Прости, дружокъ.» И волшебница исчезать.

The pretty girl returned home. "Where hast  
Прекрасный дѣвушка возвращаться домой. «Гдѣ

thou been so long", asked her mother with ill  
ты быть такъ долго», спрашивать у онъ мать съ

humour? — "What hast thou been doing so long in the wood?"  
сердце? — «Что ты дѣлать такъ долго въ роща?»,

cried her wicked sister. — "I beg pardon! I lingered by the  
закричать злой сестра. — «Виноватый! замѣшкаться,

way", replied the poor child, and at the same instant  
отвѣчать бедняжка, и въ тотъ самый минута

there issued from her pretty lips two roses, two pearls,  
скатываться изъ онъ прекрасный губа два роза, два жемчужина

and two large emeralds. "What do I see?" exclaimed  
и два большой изумрудъ. «Что я видѣть?» восклицать

the mother astonished. "These are flowers! these are precious  
мать удивленный. «Э тотъ цвѣтъ! этотъ драгоценный

stones! What has happened to thee?" — The young girl  
камень! Что случиться съ ты?» — Красавица раз-

related to her with simplicity her meeting with the fairy,  
сказывать онъ простоушно о свой встреча съ волшебница

and while doing it the flowers, diamonds and pearls  
и между тотъ цвѣтъ, алмазъ и жемчугъ

issued just so from her lips. "Good!" muttered  
сыпаться такъ съ онъ губа. «Хорошій же!» проворчать

the mother; "to-morrow I will send to the wood my elder  
мать; «завтра посылать въ роща мой старый

daughter, and it will be the same with her."

дочь, и быть тотъ же съ онъ.»

And the next morning she said to her daughter:

И на друго́й у́тро онъ сказа́вать сво́й дочѣ:

“To-day thou shalt go to fetch water: take the pitcher; but  
«Нынѣ ты пойти за водо́: взять кувши́нъ; но

pay attention, if thou meetest at the spring an old woman,  
смотре́ть же, е́сли встре́чать у исто́чникъ стару́шка,

give her to drink, and be very civil to her.”  
дава́ть онъ напива́ться; и хороше́нко прила́скиваться къ онъ.»

The wicked girl frowned, took the pitcher with ill

Зло́й дѣвчо́нка нахму́риваться, взять кувши́нъ съ

humour; went to the wood against her will, and grumbled  
доса́да; пойти́ въ ро́ща не́хотя, и ворча́ть

all along the road. The good old woman was already  
весь въ доро́га. Стари́шка сидѣ́тъ уже́

seated near the spring. “Draw me some water, my  
у исто́чникъ. «Зачерпа́ть я водо́, мой

dear!” said she to the young girl; “it is hot, I wish  
ми́лый!» сказа́ть онъ дѣвчо́нка; «(есть) жа́ркій, хоте́ть

to drink.” — “What stuff! I am not come here  
напива́ться.» — «Какъ бы не такъ! Я не при́йти сю́да за то,

to serve old vagabonds; thou wilt have to drink  
чтобы́ услу́живать ста́рый бродя́га напива́ться и

without me.” — “How rude thou art!” said the old  
безъ я.» — «Како́й же гру́бый ты!» сказа́вать ста-

woman to her; “I will punish thee. From this moment with  
ру́шка онъ; «я нака́зывать ты. Съ это́тъ порá при

each of thy words there shall issue from thy mouth either  
ка́ждый тво́й сло́во выпада́ть изъ у ты ро́тъ или́

a serpent or a frog.” She disappeared, and the wicked  
зме́я или́ лягу́шка.» Онъ исче́заетъ, а зло́й

girl ran home after having broken her pitcher  
дѣвчо́нка побѣ́жать домо́й разби́вать сво́й кувши́нъ

from spite. "What hast thou to tell me my dear daughter?"  
 съ досада. «Что сказывать, мѣлый дочка?»

asked her mother, when she saw her at a distance. —  
 спрашивать мать, видѣть онъ издалека. —

"I have nothing to tell!" answered the daughter; and all  
 «Нѣчто сказывать!» отвѣчать дочь; и

at once there issued from her mouth two vipers and two  
 вдругъ выскакивать изъ онъ ротъ два змѣя и два

toads. "What do I see! what horror!" cried the mother;  
 жаба. «Что я видѣть! какой страхъ!» закричать мать;

"but it is thy sister who is the cause of all that! I  
 «но твой сестра (есть) виноватый въ весь этотъ! Я

will make her feel it." And they ran to beat the young girl.  
 давать онъ знать.» И онъ бросаться бить меньшей дочь.

Frightened by their threats, she went to hide herself in  
 Испугаться угроза, онъ скрываться въ

the wood, ran long without daring to look behind her,  
 роща, бѣгать долго, не смѣть оглядываться,

fled very far and at last lost herself. But this  
 забѣгать далекó, и наконецъ потерять дорога. Но этотъ

was for her good. The son of the king, who was  
 быть къ онъ счастье. Сынъ царскій, который

amusing himself at that time with hunting, was just  
 забавляться тутъ охóта, находится въ тотъ

then in the wood; he saw the young girl, who, seated  
 время въ роща; увидѣть красавица, который, сидѣть

on the grass, was weeping bitterly. "What has happened to  
 на травá, плакать горько. «Что сдѣлаться съ

thee? why dost thou weep, my dear?" asked he, taking  
 ты? о что ты плакать, мѣлый?» спрашивать онъ, взять

her gently by the hand. — "Alas! how can I help  
 онъ ласково за рука. — «Богъ мой! какъ я не

weeping! My mother has driven me out of the house." She  
 пла́кать! Ма́тушка выгоня́ть я изъ до́мъ. Онъ  
 spoke, and the flowers and the precious stones issued from  
 говори́ть, а цвѣтъ и драгоце́нный ка́мень сы́паться съ  
 her rosy lips, and her tears were changed into pearls.  
 ро́зовый губа, и слеза́ обраща́ться въ жемчу́жина.

"What is the meaning of that?" asked the son of the king;  
 «Что значить э́тотъ?» спра́шивать сынъ ца́рский;  
 "whence come these flowers, these pearls and these stones?"  
 «отъ что э́тотъ цвѣтъ, жемчу́гъ и ка́мень?»

The poor child related to the prince what had  
 Бѣдняжка рассказы́вать ца́рский сынъ о то́мъ, что

happened to her. He became in love with her, and  
 случи́ться съ онъ. Онъ полюбилъ онъ, и

he loved her more on account of her being so good and  
 полюбилъ еще бо́лье за то, что онъ бытъ такъ до́брый и

so pretty, than on account of her flowers and precious  
 ми́лый, неже́ли за онъ цвѣтъ и драгоце́нный

stones. He took her with him, presented her to the king  
 ка́мень. Онъ взя́тъ онъ съ се́бя, предста́влять онъ ца́рь,

his father, whom she pleased also, and the king  
 свой о́тецъ, кото́рый онъ пона́равился та́кже, и ца́рь

permitted his son to marry her. Thus she became  
 позво́лять сынъ жени́ться на онъ. Тако́й о́бразъ онъ сдѣла́ться

a princess, and on the death of the king, when her husband  
 ца́ревна, а по сме́рть ца́рь, ко́гда онъ му́жъ

mounted the throne of his ancestors, she became queen,  
 восхо́дитъ на престо́лъ, о́тцовскій, ца́рица,

and was a good queen. And her wicked sister, what  
 и бытъ до́брый ца́рица. А онъ злой сестра́, что

happened to her? She closed her life in a miserable  
 сдѣла́ться съ онъ? Онъ конча́тъ свой жи́знь жа́лостный

way. Her mother, whom she vexed and irritated incessantly, was forced to drive her from house: престанно, быть принуждённый выгонять онъ изъ домъ; nobody would give her an asylum, and she went to hide никто не хотѣть давать онъ пристанище, и онъ скрывать herself in the forest, where she died shortly after of vexation ся въ лѣсъ, гдѣ умирать скоро съ досада and hunger. и голодъ.

# CONSTRUCTION

84.—The grammatical order of the words in Russian is further removed from the natural construction, and inversions are more frequent than in English, French or even German; this however causes no obscurity, in as much as the inflections of the words sufficiently indicate their relative concord or dependence. With respect to the order of the propositions in the sentence, it is nearly the same in the four languages, as is seen in the following examples.

Если гѣній и дарованія ума If genius and talents merit имѣютъ право на благодар- the gratitude of the nations, ность народовъ, то Россія Russia owes a monument to должна Ломоносову монументъ. Lomonossof. *Karamzin.*

Побѣды, завоеванія и величїе The victories, the conquests государственное, возвысивъ and the grandeur of the empire, духъ народа Россійскаго, имѣли by elevating the intelligence счастливое дѣйствіе и на самый of the Russian nation, had a языкъ его, который, будучи happy influence even on the управленіемъ дарованіемъ и language, which, when em-

вкусомъ писателя умнаго, можетъ равняться нынѣ въ силѣ, красотѣ и пріятности съ лучшими языками древности и нашихъ вѣмѣнъ.

*Карамзинъ.*

Повелитель многихъ языковъ языкъ Россійскій не только обширностію мѣстъ, гдѣ онъ господствуетъ, но купно и собственнымъ своимъ пространствомъ и доволъствіемъ великъ передъ всѣми въ Европѣ. Карлъ V, Римскій Императоръ, говаривалъ, что Испанскимъ языкомъ съ Богомъ, Французскимъ съ друзьями, Нѣмецкимъ съ непріятелями, Италіянскимъ съ жѣнскимъ поломъ говорить прилично. Но если бы онъ Россійскому языку былъ искусенъ, то конечно къ тому присовокупилъ бы, что имъ со всѣми ѳными говорить пристойно. Ибо нашѣлъ бы въ немъ великолѣпіе Испанскаго, живость Французскаго, крепость Нѣмецкаго, нѣжность Италіянскаго, сверхъ того богатство и сильную въ изображеніяхъ краткость Греческаго и Латінскаго языка.

*Ломоносовъ.*

played by the talent and the taste of man of genius, can now rival in strength, beauty and delicacy the noblest tongues of ancient and modern times.

*Карамзинъ.*

The Russian language, the parent of many others, is superior to all the languages of Europe not only by the extent of the countries where it is dominant, but also by its own comprehensiveness and richness. Charles the Fifth, Emperor of the Romans, said that one ought to speak Spanish to the Divinity, French to one's friends, German to one's enemies and Italian to ladies. But had he been acquainted with Russian, he would assuredly have added that one could speak it with each and all. He would have discovered in it the majesty of the Spanish, the vivacity of the French, the strength of the German, the sweetness of the Italian, and in addition energetic conciseness in its imagery with the richness of the Greek and Latin.

*Lomonosoff.*

## THIRD PART

—

## ORTHOGRAPHY.

## USE OF THE LETTERS.

- 85.—We have already seen (§ 7—10) that several letters lose their own peculiar sound, taking that of the letter with which they have the closest affinity, and that certain other letters are silent, disappearing entirely in the pronunciation. In such cases the object of *Orthography* is to indicate the letter which has lost its own peculiar sound and taken an accidental one; and, to do that, recourse must be often had to etymology, in order to discover a derivative and give it, by the help of the grammatical forms, such an inflection as may serve to show the form of the doubtful letter.

Vowels. 86.—Several vowels are often confounded in writing, on account of the close affinity or perfect identity of their pronunciation. As this confusion arises almost invariably from the absence of the tonic accent, it is necessary, in order to discover the form of the letter, to find a derivative or an inflection of the word where the doubtful vowel is accented. Thus:

we write	я́мъ (and not ямъикъ), a postilion,	because we say	ямъ (primitive word), a relay.
	(and not яйцъ), an egg. . . .		яйца (nom. plur.), eggs.
	(and not ячмень), barley. . .		ячмый (derivative), of barley.
	(and not мену), I draw. . . .		тянутъ (3d pers. pl.), they draw.
	(and not вежу), I bind. . . .		вяжешь (2d pers. sing.), thou bindest
	жалѣю (and not желѣю), I pity. .		жалъ (primitive), pity.
	шалунъ (and not шелѣн), a rogue.		шалость (derivative), roguery.
	(and not чею), a watch. . . .		часъ (primitive), the hour.
	(and not шедить), to spare.		пощада (derivative), pardon.
	моли́тва (and not малитва), a prayer.		онъ моли́тъ (3d pers. sing.), he prays.
	вдова (and not едова), the widow. .		вдовы (nom. plur.), the widows
	говори́тъ (and not заваритъ), to speak.		говору́, speaking. & разгово́ръ, discourse.

**Е. Ъ.** — The two vowels most commonly confounded are *e* and *ъ*. In order to know which of them ought to be used, recourse must be had to the dictionary. We may however observe that the letter *ъ* is never used in words taken from foreign languages; as: каде́тъ, a cadet; слёса́рь, a locksmith (Germ. Schloßer); пе́ня, fine (Lat. pœna), excepting in Ві́нна, Vienna, which is properly speaking a Slavonic word. Sometimes the vowel *и* (or *і*) is changed in the derivatives into *ъ*; as: бесѣ́да, conversation; дѣти, children; Алексѣ́й, Alexis; Серге́й, Sergius; Апри́ль, April (from сидѣть, to be seated; дитя́, child; Алексѣ́й, Серге́й, Априлі́й). In the words лека́рь, a physician; лѣка́рство, a medicine; лѣчи́тъ, to heal, &c.; which some persons write лека́рь, лека́рство, лечи́тъ, the Dictionary of the Russian Academy preserves the letter *ъ*. These vowels may in some occasions be distinguished. As the vowel *e* is in certain cases pronounced *io* or *o*, and the vowel *ъ* has this sound only in some words (§ 8), it is necessary to look for an inflection or a word in which the doubtful vowel is accented. Thus:

we write.	(and not слѣза), the tear. . . . .	on account of	слѣзы (nom. plur.), the tears.
	ель (and not ѡль), the fir. . . . .		ѡлка (diminutive), a little fir.
	берѣзникъ (and not берѣаникъ), a birch kopse.		берѣза (primitive), a birch.
	лѣдникъ (and not лѣдникъ), an ice-house. .		ледъ (primitive), ice.
	утверди́тъ (and not утѣврдитъ), to affirm.		твёрдый (primitive), firm.
	утѣврдѣнїе (and not утѣмѣнїе), persecution.		гнѣтъ (primitive), stick for packing;

**Е. Э.** — The vowel *э* is used at the beginning of the Russian words э́й, ho! эхъ, hey! э́тотъ, this; э́кой and э́такой, oh what! also at the beginning of foreign words and after a vowel; e. g. эква́торъ, the equator; э́йръ, ether; по́эма, a poem;



поѣтъ, *a poet*. After *i* we can in this case employ the vowel *e*, as in піѳа, *a piece*. Such words as had been incorporated into the Russian language before the vowel *э* was in use, are written with *e*; as: евангеліе, *the gospel*; епископъ, *a bishop*; епархія, *a diocese*; евнѹхъ, *an eunuch*; Европа, *Europe*, and some others. 'The vowel *e* is further used for the Latin or German letters *je*, *gi* and *ge*; as проѣктъ, *a project*; реѣстръ, *a register*; еѣсъ, *the sword-hilt*, еѣрейторъ, *a corporal* (*Lat. projectum, register; Germ. Gefäß, Gefreiter*).

И. I. — The vowel *i* is used, instead of *u*, before all the vowels and before the semi-vowel *ѣ*; as: сіѳ, *that*; приѣчатъ, *to accustom*; пріѣтный, *agreeable*; гѣній, *genius*, as also in the word міръ, *the world*, and its derivatives: мірскѳй, *worldly*; всемірный, *universal*; Владиміръ, *Vladimir*, to be distinguished from міръ, *peace*, and its derivatives; as: мірный, *peaceful*; мирить, *to reconcile*; смирный, *calm*. In words formed from the numerals, as: пяти-аршинный, *of five yards*; семи-угѳльный, *heptagon*, &c., the letter *u* is retained, but a hyphen must be placed between the two parts of the word. In the word мѣро, *the holy oil*, and its derivatives: мѣропомѣзаніе, *unction*; мѣроносца, *bearer of aromatics*; мѣропомѣзаникъ, *the Lord's anointed*, the Slavonic letter ѣмѣща has been retained.

И. Ы. — The vowel *ы* is formed by the union of *э* and *u*; in compound words however it is necessary to retain the form of these two letters, and write, for instance: предъѣдѣщій, *preceding*; безъимѣнный, *anonymous*, &c. It is only in the words compounded of искѣтъ, *to seek*, and игратъ, *to play*, that the letters *э* and *u* are joined and form *ы*; e. g. сыщикъ, *an emissary*; розыскъ, *the inquiry*; сыгратъся, *to play quits*; разыгратъ, *to raffle for* (instead of сѣйщикъ, рѳзыскъ, сѣигратъся, рѳвѣигратъ). — In foreign words after *ц* the vowel *u* is employed, although pronounced *ы*; thus we write медицина, *medicine*; цѣркуль, *compasses*; цѣѳра (which some persons write цѣѳра), *a cipher*; excepting цыгѣнъ, *a gypsy*, and цыѳиръ, *ciphers*. — In the adjectives it is necessary to distinguish the terminations *ыѣ* and *ѣѣ*, as: поѣстный, *of Lent*; лѣтній, *of summer*, and its compounds: совершеннолѣтній, *of full age*; столѣтній, *centenary*; &c.; the word малѳлѣтній, *young* is an exception.

87.—The semi-vowels (ъ, ь, ѣ), the two first of which are placed after consonants, and the last after vowels, are vowels only half uttered (§ 9), *ъ* being half of the vowel *o*, *ь* half of the vowel *u*. Semi-vowels.

The semi-vowel *ъ* at the end of words may be used after all the consonants, while the semi-vowel *ь* cannot be placed either after the gutturals (г, к, х) or the lingual (ц). The hard or liquid sound of these two letters, which is generally perceived after consonants, as: *братъ, the brother*, and *братъ, to take*; *пыль, flame*, and *пыль, dust*; *станъ, the stature*, and *станъ, become*, is not distinguished after the hissing letters (ж, ч, ш, щ), as in the words: *ножь, a knife*, and *ложъ, a lie*; *мечъ, a sword*, and *сечь, to cut*; *камышъ, the reed*, and *мышъ, a mouse*; *тощъ, fasting*, and *нощъ, the night*.

In the middle of a word the semi-vowel *ь* is placed after all the consonants, excepting г, к, х, ц; e. g. *судьба, destiny*; *весьма, very*; *обезьяна, a monkey*; *деньги, money*; *письмо, a letter*; *польза, utility*; *сельдь, a herring*; *тюрьма, the prison*, &c. The semi-vowel *ъ*, in words formed with a preposition, is only retained before the vowels, *е, и, ю, я*; as: *отъѣмлю, I take away*; *предъидущій, preceding*; *въѣхать, to enter*; *объюродѣть, to become a fool*; *объявить, to announce*. The same is the case with the Latin prepositions *ad* and *ob*, as in the words *адъютантъ, an adjutant*; *объективный, objective*.

The semi-vowels *ь* and *ѣ* are sufficiently distinct; the former (*ь*) can only be used after a consonant, the latter (*ѣ*) only after a vowel, as we have already seen, § 9.

88.—The feeble consonants (б, в, г, д, ж, з), Consonants. which, at the end and in the middle of a word before a strong letter, are articulated like their corresponding strong consonants (п, ф, к or х, т, ш, с, § 10), may be distinguished from the latter by an inflection of the words. Thus:

we write:	{	бобъ, a bean, and цѣпъ, a flail,	{	бобѣ and цѣпѣ.
		ловъ, capture, and граѣъ, a count,		ловѣ and граѣѣ.
		кругъ, a circle, and крюкъ, a hook,		крукѣ and крюкѣ.
		Богъ, God, and духъ, spirit,		Богѣ and духѣ.
		кладъ, treasure, and братъ, brother.		кладѣ and братѣ.
		ножъ, a knife, and ковшъ, a scoop,		ножѣ and ковшѣ.
		гузъ, the ace, and усъ, the mustache.		гузѣ and усѣ
	{	трубка, a pipe, and шанка, a cap,	{	трубокѣ and шанокѣ
		лавка, a bench, and фѣйка, a blow-pipe,		лавокѣ and фѣйокѣ
		бѣлка, sentry-box, and ѣтка, a duck,		бѣдокѣ and ѣтокѣ.
		кружка, a goblet, and мѣшка, little fly,		кружекѣ and мѣше
		сказка, a tale, and пласка, a dance,		сказокѣ and пласкѣ

In cases where the change of inflection fails to indicate the doubtful letter, recourse must be had to etymology to discover the root from which the derivative word is formed. Thus:

we write:	{	просьба, a prayer (and not <i>про́сьба</i> ), . . .	{	просить, to pray, from the root <i>про</i>
		женѣтъ, marriage (and not <i>женѣдѣтъ</i> ), . .		женѣтъ, to marry (in <i>Sl. женѣтѣтъ</i> )
		бѣдочникъ, a sentry (and not <i>бѣточникѣ</i> ), .		бѣдка, sentry-box, gen. pl. бѣдокѣ.
		присѣтъ, presence (and not <i>присѣдѣтъ</i> ), . .		сѣтъ, 3d pers. pl. of <i>есѣтъ</i> , I am.
		жжѣнный, burnt (and not <i>сжѣнный</i> ), . . .		жжѣшь, 2d pers. sing. of <i>жгу</i> , I burn.
		рябчикъ, a hazel-hen (and not <i>рячикѣ</i> ), . .		рябѣй, with variegated feathers.
		грѣчевый, of buck-wheat (and not <i>грѣщевый</i> ), .		грѣча, buck-wheat, <i>ч</i> being immutab
		свѣчникъ, a candlestick (and not <i>свѣшникѣ</i> ), .		свѣча, a candle, from <i>свѣтъ</i> , light
		гудѣчикъ, violinist (and not <i>гудѣшникѣ</i> ), . .		гудѣкъ, violin, <i>ж</i> and <i>к</i> change into
		вѣдѣшникъ, rag-gatherer (and not <i>вѣдѣчикѣ</i> ), .		вѣдѣшь, a rag, from <i>вѣдѣхъ</i> , old.

The present orthography of the word *поручикъ*, a lieutenant (from *поручить*, to commit, from *рукѣ*, the hand), is not in conformity with its etymology; for the termination being *чикѣ* (as in *потѣтчикъ*, an indulger, from *потѣкать*, to connive, from *такѣ*, thus), it ought to be written *порутчикъ*, as some persons still write it. Another exception is *свѣдѣба*, wedding (formerly *свѣдѣба*), from *свѣдѣтъ*, to ask in marriage.

The word *столпъ*, a column, is written in Slavonic with *ѣ* *п*, as also its derivatives: *столпникъ*, the styliæ; *столпнотвореніе*, the building of the tower of Babel; but in Russian it is written with a *б*, *столбъ*, a consonant which is retained in the words *столбовой*, columnar; *отолбѣкъ*, basalt; *столбнякъ*, tetanus; *остолбѣнѣтъ*, to be stupefied.

З. — The feeble consonant *з* of the preposition *въ* or *возъ*, *изъ*, *низъ*, *разъ* or *роизъ*, is changed, in derivatives, before the strong consonants *к*, *п*, *т*, *х*, into its corresponding strong consonant *с*; thus we write: *вспомнить*, to remember; *воспитаніе*, education; *исключить*, to exclude; *нисходить*, to descend; *расторгнуть*, to tear up; *рѣспись*, a catalogue (instead of *въпомнить*, *возпитаніе*, *изключить*, *низходить*, *разторгнуть*, *рѣзпись*). Before the strong consonants *с*, *ц*, *ч*, *ш* and *щ*, the letter *з* keeps its form, as in *изстари*, formerly; *разцвѣстїи*, to open; *изчѣзнуть*, to disappear; *возшествіе*, accession; *разщѣпъ*, a slit. The prepositions *безъ* and *чрезъ* in this case remain unchanged; thus we write: *безподобный*, incomparable; *чрезчуръ*, excessively (and not *бесподобный*, *чресчуръ*). It is the same with the preposition *съ*, which retains its form before a feeble consonant, although it then takes the pronunciation of *з*; thus we should write: *сбавить*, to diminish; *сдѣлать*, to make; *сгонять*, to drive off; *сжимать*, to compress (and not *збавить*, *здѣлать*, *згонять*, *зжимать*).

Ц. — The compound consonant *ц* cannot be used instead of *тс* or *дс*, when *т* and *д* are radical letters, and *с* belongs to the termination of the word; thus we write: *плѣтскій*, carnal, from *плѣть*, the flesh; *персидскій*, Persian, from the Latin *Persis*, *sidis* (and not *плѣцскій*, *персїцскій*); but we write: *нѣмецкій*, German, from *Нѣмецъ*, a German; *казакскій*, Cossack's, from *казакъ*, a Cossack. In the numerals we write *дц*, as: *одинадцать*, eleven; *двадцать*, twenty, words contracted from the Slavonic *одѣнь-на-десять*, *двѣ-десять*.

Щ. — The compound consonant *щ*, in the derivatives, is the commutation of *ск* and *ст*, or else it supplies the place of the consonants *зч*, *жч*, *сч*, as: *вощить*, to wax, from *воскъ*, wax; *умащать*, to anoint, from *масть*, balm; *прикащикъ*, a clerk, from *приказъ*, an order; *рыщикъ*, a cutter, from *рѣзать*, to cut. But the form of the radical letters is retained in the words *счастье*, happiness; *считать*, to count; *счётъ*, *разсчётъ*, an account; *мужчина*, a man, which must not be written *щастіе*, *щитать*, *щѣтъ*, *разщѣтъ*, though we also write *мущина*.

Ф. Θ. — The consonants *ф* and *θ* are used, the former for Russian words, and such Greek and other words as are

written with *φ*, *f* or *ph*, and the latter for Greek words written with *θ* or *th*; thus we write: *судѣйка*, a *jacket*; *семья*, a *family*; *физика*, *physics*; *Филиппъ*, *Philip*; *Фотій*, *Photius*; and *рѣкъ*, *river*; *рѣка*, *river*; *мнѣологія*, *mythology*; *Теодоръ*, *Theodore*; *Томѣ*, *Thomas*.

Doubling of  
consonants

89.—The consonants are doubled in Russian in the following cases: 1) In the words in *никъ*, *ство*, *ный*, *нй* and *скій*, the radical of which terminates in *н* or *с*; e. g. *плѣнникъ*, a *prisoner*, from *плѣнь*, *captivity*; *искусство*, *art*, from *искусъ*, an *essay*; *истинный*, *true*, from *истина*, the *truth*; *осенний*, *autumnal*, from *осень*, *autumn*; *Русскій*, *Russian*, from *Русь*, *Russia*. The same takes place in adjectives in *енный*, and passive participles in *анный*, *янный*, *енный*, *пнный*, e. g. *искусственный*, *artificial*; *дѣланный*, *made*; *заслуженный*, *merited*. These participles must not be confounded with the qualifying and possessive adjectives; as: *учёный*, *learned*; *заслужёный*, *emerited*; *кожаный*, *of skin*; *серебряный*, *of silver*, which are written with a single *н*.—2) In such words as are formed with a preposition, where the initial consonant of the primitive is the same as the final consonant of the preposition; e. g. *беззубый*, *toothless*; *вводить*, *to introduce*; *подданный*, *subject*; *ссылка*, *exile*.—3) In the preterit of the pronominal verbs, when the verb ends in the consonant *с*; as: *разнёсся*, *it has spread itself*; *спасся*, *he has saved himself*.—4) When by the change of a commutable letter two consonants come together, as in the verb *жгу*, *I burn*, which, by the change of *з* into *ж*, is in the second person *жжёшь*, and in the passive participle *жжённый*; and in *вожжа*, a *rein*; *вожжать*, *to bridle*,

from *водить*, *to lead*, by the change of *ѡ* into *ж*.—

5) Lastly consonants are doubled in some foreign words; e. g. *аббатъ*, *an abbot*; *суббота*, *Saturday*; *акула*, *a shark*; *классъ*, *a class*; *колосъ*, *a colossus*; *коллегія*, *a college*; *металлъ*, *a metall*, &c.

90.—The *capital* letters (прописныя буквы) are employed, generally speaking, in Russian as in English. Thus a capital letter is placed at the beginning of every sentence, of every line of poetry, of all the proper names of men, places, nations, rivers, mountains and winds, as also of all those of a science, an art or a profession, if taken in an individual sense which distinguishes the particular science, art or profession from every other. All titles and ranks joined to a proper name must also be distinguished by an initial capital, and the same is the case with the appellative names of tribunals, companies and corporate bodies.

#### DIVISION OF WORDS INTO SYLLABLES.

91.—The division of words into syllables, when one part has to be carried on from one line to another, is marked by the hyphen, and is performed according to the following rules which are based on the etymology of the words:

1. Monosyllables, as: *страсть*, *passion*; *здравъ*, *in health*; *чувствъ*, *of the senses* (*gen. pl.*), cannot be divided.

2. Prepositions and every other affix, whether initial or final, may be separated from the rest of the

word; e. g. от-ра́да, *mitigation*; о-тра́ва, *poison*; без-конѣч-ный, *infinite*; востокъ, *the East*; мед-вѣдь, *a bear*; раз-умъ, *reason*; сво́йство, *property*; ям-щикъ, *a postilion*; зѣм-скій, *terrestrial*; дру́жба, *friendship*; Царь-гра́дъ, *Constantinople*, &c.

3. The compound consonants *жд*, *ст*, as also *кс*, *кз*, *нс* and *дж* in foreign words, cannot be divided; e. g. ме́-жду, *between*; три́-ста, *three hundred*; Але-ксáндръ, *Alexander*; э-кзáмень, *examination*; кле-псýдра, *a clepsydra*; Рóджеръ, *Roger*.

4. The final vowels, as: сво́я, *his*; круто́е, *steep*; as well as the terminations of the verbs, as: пою́тъ, *they sing*; стрóятъ, *they build*; жалѣ́етъ, *he regrets*, cannot be separated from the rest of the word.

#### ORTHOGRAPHY OF ISOLATED WORDS.

Russian  
words

92.—Every Russian word is written as a single word, if by the loss of one of its component parts the sense would be changed; e. g. соуча́стникъ, *an accomplice*; избра́нный, *elected*; отчѣ́тъ, *an account*; при́быль, *a gain*; морехо́дъ, *the navigation*; водопрово́дъ, *an aqueduct*, &c. On this subject the following rules must be observed:

1) The prepositions which are employed both conjointly and separately (§ 76), are written conjointly: *a*) Before the verbs and words derived from them; e. g. прино́сить, *to bring*; прино́съ, *a gift*; приноше́ние, *the offering*; приносýтель, *a bearer*, &c. *b*) Before such other parts of speech as are not used without the preposition; as: на́выкъ, *the habit*; извѣ́стный, *known*; ве́тарь, *anciently*;

НАВЗНИЧЬ, *backwards*; ОЪЕМЬ, *on the ground*. c) Before nouns, adjectives, pronouns and adverbs as form with the preposition an adverb or a conjunction; e. g. встаринѣ, *formerly*; извнѣ, *from without*; сначала, *in the first place*; вслѣдъ, *in the footsteps*; потомѣ, *hence*. If the noun from which the adverb is formed, is determined by another word, the preposition is written separately; e. g. съ начала вѣка, *at the beginning of the century*; по томѣ случаю, *on this occasion*. The adverbs во-первыхъ, *firstly*, во-вторыхъ, *secondly*; по-русски, *in Russian*; по-солдатски, *like soldiers*, and others similar, as also the compound prepositions изъ-за, *from behind*, and изъ-подъ, *from under*, are written with the hyphen (§ 94, 2).

2. The prefix particle *нѣ* is always written conjointly with the pronoun or the adverb following; as: нѣкто, *some one*; нѣкоторый, *some*; нѣкогда, *once*.

3. The particle *ни* is written conjointly in the words никто, *nobody*; ничто, *nothing*; нигдѣ, *nowhere*; куда, *nowhere*; никогда, *never*; никакъ, *not at all*, and separately in all other words; as: ни который, *none*; ни зерна, *not a grain*.

4) The negative *не* is written separately before verbs and the circumstantial adverbs; as: не смѣю, *I dare not*; не здѣсь, *not here*, with the exception of verbs whose proper meaning is changed by the negative *не*, or which are not used without the negative; as: не доставать, *to be wanting*; не навидѣть, *to hate*; не доверять, *to distrust*. It is written conjointly with nouns, qualifying adjectives and adverbs, when the negation refers to the object



or to the quality, and not to the verb; e. g. *неравенство нравовъ бывае́тъ причино́ю споровъ*, *dissimilarity of character is the cause of the quarrels*; *несно́сная ску́ка уби́вае́тъ ме́ня*, *an unbearable ennui is killing me*; *я гуляю́ неохото́ю*, *I walk against my will*; and also when the noun has no meaning without the negation; e. g. *не́топырь*, *a bat*; *негодя́й*, *a good-for-nothing*; *не́дугъ*, *a disease*. With the participles the negative *не* is written conjointly when, like the adjectives, they serve to determine the nouns; and separately when, like the verbs, they have a complement; e. g. *незна́ющий челове́къ*, *an ignorant man*; *челове́къ, не зна́ющий сво́ихъ обяза́нностей*, *the man who is ignorant of his duties*.

5. The particle *бы* or *бъ* is written conjointly only in the conjunctions *чтобы́* (or *чтобъ́*) and *дабы́*, *that*; everywhere else it is written separately. It is necessary to distinguish the conjunction from the pronoun *что* with *бы́*; e. g. *чтобы́ онъ да́лъ тебѣ́ э́ту кни́гу*, *I wish him to give you this book*; *что бы́ да́лъ я за э́ту кни́гу*, *what would I have given for this book*! In the latter case *бы* is written separately.

6. The conjunction *уже́* or *ужъ́* is conjointly written in the words *уже́* or *ужъ́*, *already*; *да́же*, *even*; *ниже́*, *not even*, and separately in the other words; as: *или́ же*, *or even*; *одна́ко же*, *however*; *то́тъ же*, *the same*. It is also written conjointly in the copulative conjunction *та́кже*, and the adverb *то́же*, *too*; but it is written separately in the comparative conjunction *та́къ же*, *as well*, and in the pronoun *то*

же, *the same*; e. g. онъ такъ же хорошо пишетъ, какъ читаетъ, *he writes as well as he reads*: онъ такъ же дворянинъ, *he is also gentleman*; я боленъ и онъ тоже, *I am sick and he too*; я говорю то же, что и вы, *I say the same thing as you*.

93.—Foreign words are written with those letters Foreign words. of the Russian alphabet, which give as closely as possible the pronunciation of these words in the language from which they are borrowed: the rule is the base of the orthography of foreign words. Such are for instance the words: епархія, *a diocese*; кѣедрa, *the pulpit* (*Gr. ἐπαρχία, κάεδρα*); сенаторъ, *a senator*; корона, *a crown* (*Lat. senator, corona*); ѱжю, *the agio*; карета, *a carriage* (*Ital. agio, carreta*); футъ, *a foot*; сплинъ, *the spleen* (from the *English*); актёръ, *an actor*; медаль, *a medal* (*Fr. acteur, médaille*); брѹстверь, *the parapet*; кѹчеръ, *a coachman* (*Germ. Brustwehr, Kutsher*); ватерпасъ, *a level*; фарватеръ, *the channel* (*Dutch: waterpas, vaarwater*); вѣнзель, *a cipher*; трактёръ, *an eating-house keeper* (*Pol. węzel, traktyer*). Some of these words in passing into the Russian language have taken terminations peculiar to it, while others have undergone an alteration both in their pronunciation and orthography; such are: фитиль, *a match*; фонарь, *a lanthorn* (*mod. Gr. φωτίλι, φανάριον*); алтарь, *an altar*; мраморъ, *marble* (*Lat. altare, marmor*); яхта, *a yacht*; мѣчманъ, *a midshipman* (from the *English*); шпага, *a sword* (*Ital. spada*); салфетка, *a napkin*; табакерка, *a snuff-box* (*Fr. serviette, tabatière*); биржа, *the exchange*; тарелка, *a plate*, (*Germ. Teller, Teller*); шкиперъ,

*master of a merchantship*; шлюзъ, *a sluice* (*Dutch: schipper, sluis*), &c.

The same thing takes place in the Greek and Latin proper names; as: Алексáндръ, *Alexander*; Николáй, *Nicholas*; Филипъ, *Philip*; Пáвелъ, *Paul*; Елéна, *Helen*; А́вгустъ, *Augustus*; Ю́лий, *Julius*; Натáля, *Nataly*. Some follow the pronunciation of both Greek and Latin; as: Омíръ and Гомéръ, *Homer*; Алкивиáдъ and Алцибиáдъ, *Alcibiades*; Фивъ and Фебъ, *Phæbus*; Би́отия and Бе́отия, *Beotia*. Others are formed from the Greek or Latin genitive; as: Биáнтъ, *Bias*; Цицерóнъ, *Cicero*; Артемíда, *Artemis*; Илиáда, *the Iliad*; Венéра, *Venus*; Церéра, *Ceres*.\*

The proper names of lands, countries, rivers, towns and other names of modern geography, some retain their Latin denomination; as: Гермáния, *Germany*; А́встрія, *Austria*; Сици́лія, *Sicily*; Неáполь, *Naples*; Флорéнція, *Florence*; Везúвий, *Vesuvius*, &c. Others are written as they are pronounced in the language to which they belong; as: Лондонъ, *London*; Чéльси, *Chelsea*; Гриничъ, *Greenwich*; Мюнхенъ, *Munich*; Майнцъ, *Mayence*; Брюссель, *Brussels*; Маáсъ, *the Meuse*; Шéльда, *the Scheldt*; Рейнъ, *the Rhine*; Кордóва, *Cordova*; Хéресъ, *Xeres*; Бадахóсъ, *Badajoz*; Схевени́нгенъ, *Schevening*; Кéльнъ, *Cologne*; Рéгенсбургъ, *Ratisbon*; Лítтихъ, *Liege*; А́хенъ, *Aix-la-Chapelle*; Карлсрúэ, *Carlsruhe*; Пиачéнца, *Piacenza*; Ливóрно, *Leghorn*; Бордó, *Bordeaux*; Марсéль, *Marseille*; Лоáра, *the Loire*, &c. Some of these names have passed into the Russian through another language; such

are: Пари́жъ, *Paris* (from the Italian *Parigi*); Римъ, *Rome* (from the Polish *Rzym*); Копенга́генъ, *Copenhagen* (from the German *Kopenhagen*, instead of the Danish *Kiøbenhavn*). Some German names of countries and towns inhabited by Slavonian tribes have been replaced by Slavonic names; as: Вѣна, *Vienna*; Бресла́вль, *Breslau*; Тору́нь, *Thorn*; Львовъ, *Lemberg*; Венгрія, *Hungary*, and some others.

The proper names of historical persons and others in modern languages are written in Russian according to the pronunciation of the language to which they belong; such are the English names: Шекспиръ, *Shakespeare*; Байронъ, *Byron*; Юмъ, *Hume*; Джонсонъ, *Johnson*; Ньютонъ, *Newton*; the French names: Ришельё, *Richelieu*; Даву, *Davoust*; Руссо, *Rousscau*; Ролленъ, *Rollin*; Делиль, *Delille*; the German names: Блюхеръ, *Blücher*; Виландъ, *Wieland*; Гёте, *Gæthe*; Гайднъ, *Haydn*; the Italian names: Херубини, *Cherubini*; Чимароза, *Cimarosa*; the Polish names: Чарторы́скій, *Czartoryski*; Потóцкая, *Potocka*; Нѣмцевичъ, *Niemcewicz*, &c.

We may here remark that the proper names of the Russian language, the alphabet of which differs from that of the other European tongues, ought to be written in each foreign language in such a manner as to give as closely as possible the Russian pronunciation. Thus the Russian proper names: Кара́мзинъ, Пу́шкинъ, Держави́нъ, Шишкóвъ, Жуковскій, Мещерскій, Чи́теринъ, Каза́нь, Вязьма, Ржевъ, Житоми́ръ, are written in English: *Karamsin, Pushkin, Derzhavin, Shishkof, Zhukovski, Mestcherski, Tchitcherin, Kasan, Viasma, Rzeh, Zhitomir*, in French: *Karamzine, Pouchekine, Derjavine, Chichekof, Joukovski, Mestcherski, Tchitchérine, Kasan, Viasma, Rjef, Zitomir*; in German: *Karamzin, Puschkint, Derzhawin, Schischlow, Schukowski, Meischtscheraki, Tschitcherine, Kasan, Wiasma or Wäsmä, Rjehw, Schitomir*, and

the same in other languages. Exceptions will be found to this rule in certain proper names which have been adopted long ago; as: Москва́, Санктпетербур́гъ, Варшава́, Мита́ва, and some others; in English: *Moscow, Saint-Petersburg, Warsaw, Mittau*; in French: *Moscou, Saint-Petersbourg, Varsovie, Mittau*; in German: *Moskau, St. Petersburg, Warschau, Mitau*. See the particular Vocabularies of the *Parallel Dictionaries of the Russian, French, German and English languages*.

#### ORTHOGRAPHIC SIGNS.

94.—The *orthographic signs* (зна́ки правописа́нія) of the Russian language are: the *accent* (ударе́ние), the *hyphen* (едини́тельный знакъ or черто́чка), the *sign of brevity* (кра́ткая) and the *diæresis* (надстро́чное двоето́чье).

1. The *accent* (´) serves to distinguish the homonyms or words which though written alike have a different meaning, as also the similar inflections of the words; as: замо́къ, *a castle*, and замо́къ, *a lock*; по́дать, *the tax*, and по́дать, *to give*; стои́тъ, *it costs*, and стои́тъ, *he is up*; выхо́дить, *to obtain*, and выхо́дить, *to go out*; сло́ва, *of the word (gen. sing.)*, and слова́, *the words (nom. plur.)*. The accent is further placed on the relative pronoun что́, to be distinguished from the conjunction что; e. g. зна́ешь ли что́ тебѣ́ по́лезно, *dost thou know what is useful to thee?* and зна́ешь ли, что́ тебѣ́ по́лезно уче́ние, *dost thou know that study is useful to thee?*

2. The *hyphen* (-) is used to mark the connection between two or more words; e. g. Алекса́н-

дро-Нѣвская Лавра, *the monastery of St-Alexander Nevsky*; генераль-маіоръ, *major general*; штабъ-офицеръ, *field officier*; Иванъ-да-Марья, *cow-wheat*. The hyphen is also used with the adverbs formed from the prepositions *во* and *но*, with the compound prepositions (§ 92. 1), and with the particle *то*; as: какъ-то, *such as*; что-то, *something*. It is also used at the end of a line, when a part of a word has to be carried on to the line following.

3. The *sign of brevity* (◌ъ) is placed over the vowel *u* (ѣ), converting it into a semi-vowel, which joined with the preceding vowel forms only a syllable; as: мой, *my*; сей, *this*; нейдѣтъ, *he does not go*; найдѣти, *to find*. This mark is also used in prosody to indicate the short syllables, as we shall see when speaking of Russian versification.

4. The *diæresis* (¨) is a double dot which is placed over the vowel *e* (ѳ), when it has the sound of *io* or *o*; e. g. слѣзы, *tears*; жѣлтый, *yellow*. The letter *ë* is also used as the equivalent of the French *eu* and the German *ö*, as in the words Монтескѣ, *Montesquieu*; актёръ, *player* (*Fr. acteur*); Гёте, *Gæthe* (*Germ. Göthe*).

#### MARKS OF PUNCTUATION.

•95.—The *marks of punctuation* (знаки препинанія) are the same in Russian as in English, viz: the *comma* (запятая ,), the *semicolon* (точка съ запятою ;), the *colon* (двоеточіе :), the *full stop* or *period* (точка .), the *note of interrogation* (знакъ

вопросительный ?), the *note of exclamation* (знакъ восклицательный !), the *points of suspension* (знакъ пресѣкательный . . . . .), the *dash* (знакъ мыслеотдѣлительный or тире —), the *parenthesis* (вмѣстительный знакъ or ско́бки ( )), the *inverted commas* or *quotation* (внóсный знакъ or кавы́чки « ») and the *paragraph* (красная строка́). The use of these marks of punctuation is nearly the same in all languages.

## FOURTH PART

### PROSODY.

96.—Prosody consists of two parts: 1) *orthoepy* (сло́гоударе́ние), or the measured pronunciation of syllables and words, and 2) *versification* (стихо́сло-же́ние), which teaches the laws of writing poetry correctly.

Division of  
prosody.

### ORTHOEPY.

97.—In the pronunciation of words attention must be paid not only to the particular articulation of each of the letters of which they may be composed, but also and especially to the accented syllable. The *prosodical* or *tonic accent* (ударе́ние, § 12) is a stress of the voice which is heard in one of the syllables of a polysyllabic word, so that this syllable shall strike the ear more forcibly than the others and appear to predominate over them. Thus in the words вода́, *water*; не́бо, *the sky*; свобо́да, *liberty*; превосхо́дительство, *excellency*, the voice is raised in the syllables *да*, *не*, *бо*, *ду*. The accented syllable is, in prosody, called *strong* or *long*, and the unaccented syllables *weak* or *short*.

Prosodical  
or tonic  
accent



Place of the  
accent.

98.—The accent, in polysyllabic words, is found:  
1) on the radical syllable: ВѢДѢТЬ, *to know*; ВѢДО-  
МОСТЬ, *information*; НЕВѢЖЕСТВО, *ignorance*; ИСПОВѢ-  
ДАТЬ, *to confess*; УВѢДОМИТЬ, *to inform*; ИЗВѢСТІЕ,  
*news*; 2) on the termination: ВѢДУНЪ, *a sorcerer*;  
ВѢСТОВОЙ, *orderly*; ИЗВѢСТИТЬ, *to notify*; ЗАПОВѢДНОЙ,  
*interdicted*; 3) on the preposition: ВЫВѢДАТЬ, *to ex-  
plore*; ЗАПОВѢДЬ, *commandment*; ПОВѢСТЬ, *a tale*;  
СОВѢСТЬ, *conscience*; 4) on the prefix in compound  
words: БЛАГОВѢСТИТЬ, *to ring to church*.

These examples show that the accentuation of words in Russian is very variable; and practice and the dictionary can alone enable us to place the accent correctly, as no fixed rules on the subject have hitherto been discovered. We may however remark that a word, when standing alone, may be accented differently to what it is, when joined to other words; thus the pronouns at times lose their accent; again, the nouns and the numerals which have the moveable accent, in the other cases often transfer it to the preposition; in like manner the apocopated adjectives and the verbs transfer it to the negative; e. g. ЧТІИ ОТЦА ТВОЕГО И МАТЕРЬ ТВОЮ, *honour thy father and thy mother*; ДРУЗЬЯ МОИ, *my friends*; ПО БЕРЕГУ, *along the shore*; ЗА МОРЕМЪ, *beyond the sea*; ОНЪ НЕ ВЕСЕЛЪ, *he is not gay*; Я НЕ БРАЛЪ, *I have not taken*. We may here repeat, what we have already indicated in the declensions and conjugations, that, in the change of inflections, the accent is often transferred from one syllable to another.

VERSIFICATION.

99.—The Russian versification, which, like that <sup>Tonic versification</sup> of England and Germany, is based on the prosodical accent, is termed *tonic* versification; while that of French language and various other modern tongues, depending on the number of syllables employed, is called *syllabic*, and that of the Greeks and Romans, which is based on quantity or the length and brevity of the syllables, is termed *metrical*.

100.—In the tonic versification the verses are also <sup>Foot or metre.</sup> measured by *feet*, as in Greek and Latin. The *foot* (стопа) or *metre* (размѣръ), in Russian poetry, is formed by the union of two or three syllables, one of which has the prosodical accent. The feet employed in the structure of Russian verse are six in number, viz:

1. The *iambus* (ямбъ), composed of two syllables with the prosodical accent on the last, ∪—: зима́, весна́.

2. The *chorcus* (хорей) or *trochee* (трохей), consisting of two syllables with the accent on the first, ∪—: лѣто, о́сень.

8. The *pyrrhic* (пирри́хій), formed of two unaccented syllables, ∪∪: such are the two first syllables of беспо́лезный. The pyrrhic in the middle of a line is used instead of an iambus or a trochee.

4. The *dactyl* (да́ктиль), formed of three syllables with the accent on the first, —∪∪: па́лица, ра́достный.

5. The *amphibrach* (амфибра́хій), formed of three syllables with the accent on the second, ∪—∪: причи́на, цѣ́люю.

6. The *anapæst* (анáпестъ), formed of three syllables with the accent on the last, ∪∪-: челове́къ, вре́мена́.

Denomina-  
tion of the  
verses.

101.—The verse or line of poetry takes its name from the nature of the feet of which it is composed. There are verses of six, five, four, three, two feet, and even of one, which are termed *iambic*, *choraic*, *dactylic*, *amphibrachic*, *anapæstic*, *dactylo-choraic*, *anapæsto-iambic*, according as they may be formed of a single one of these metres or of a combination of several. The lines which have not the same number of feet are termed *free verses* (во́льные стихи́).

The verses most commonly employed in modern Russian poetry are the following:

1. The *hexameters* or the *dactylo-choraic* verses of six feet, of which the four first are dactyls or trochees, the fifth a dactyl, and the sixth a trochee. This line is an imitation of the Greek and Latin hexameter, from which it differs only in the employment of trochees instead of spondees, which do not exist in Russian. It is used in epic poems, especially in such as are translations from the ancient languages. Ех.

— ∪ ∪ — ∪ ∪ | — ∪ ∪ | — ∪ ∪ | — ∪ ∪ | — ∪ |

Гёкторъ геро́й съ колесни́цы съ ору́жьемъ спряну́лъ на зёмлю́  
О́стрыя ко́пья коле́бля, поте́къ по ряда́мъ ополче́нiй  
Въ бой распаляя Троя́нъ; и возжёгъ жесто́кую сѣчу́;  
Всѣ обрати́лись отъ бѣгства и ста́ли въ лицѣ́ Аргивя́намъ.

Гибди́чь.

2. The *iambic* verses of six feet, or *alexandrine* (александрійскіе), are used in great compositions, such as epic and didactic poems, tragedies, comedies, satires, epistles, elegies, idyls, &c.; e. g.

$$\begin{array}{c|c|c|c|c|c} \cup & \cup & \cup & \cup & \cup & \cup \\ \cup & \cup & \cup & \cup & \cup & \cup \end{array}$$

Ужé блвднётъ день, скрывáясь за горóу;  
Шумящія стада́ толпятся надъ рѣкóй.

*Жуковскій.*

3. The *iambic* verses of five feet, but seldom used; e. g.

Ты говоришь, что мучусь надъ стихомъ,  
Что не пишу его, а сочиняю.

*Князь Вяземскій.*

The iambic verse of five feet is sometimes used alternately with that of six; e. g.

**Какое торжество готовить древний Рим?  
Куда текут народа шумны волны?**

**Бѣтюшковъ.**

4. The *iambic* verses of four feet are used in odes and other lyrical poems; and those of three, two and even a single foot, in songs and other light compositions; e. g.

О ты, что въ горѣсти напрасно  
На Бога ропщешь, человекъ!  
Внимай, коль въ ревности ужасно  
Онъ къ Гову изъ тѣчи рекъ.

*Ломоносовъ.*

Ужé со тмóю нóщи  
Простёрлась тишинá;  
Выхóдить изъ-за рóщи  
Печáльная лунá.

**Капнисть.**

Играй, Адель,  
Не знай печали!  
Хариты, Лель  
Тебя вьнчали.

Ал. Пушкинъ.

Ступай,  
Сзывай  
Съ лѣсовъ  
Всѣхъ псовъ  
На край  
Ай, ай!

Державинъ.

5. The *free iambic* verses are employed in fables, tales, epigrams, epitaphs, inscriptions, &c.; e. g.

Въ прихожей на полу,  
Въ углу,  
Пустой мышокъ валялся.  
У самыхъ низкихъ слугъ  
Онъ на обтирку ногъ нерѣдко помыкался;  
Какъ вдругъ  
Мышокъ нашъ въ честь попался,  
И весь червотцами набить:  
Въ окóванномъ ларцѣ въ сохранности лежить.

Крыловъ.

6. The *choraic* or *trochaic* verses of six, five, four, three and two feet, sometimes of the same length and sometimes of a different length, are used in various poems. The choraics of four feet are chiefly used in songs; e. g.

— — — — — | — — — — — | — — — — — | — — — — — |

Нѣтъ подружки нѣжной, нѣтъ прелестной Лилы!  
Всѣ осиротѣло!  
Плачь, Любовь и Дружба! плачь, Гимень унылый!  
Счастье улетѣло!

Батюшковъ.

Слѣвсья, Алексѣандръ, Елисаветѣ,  
До вечерней тихихъ дней зарі;  
И сіяніе въ страну полсвѣта  
Съ высоты престола распростри.

*Бобрѣвъ.*

Стѣнетъ сізый голубѣчекъ,  
Стѣнетъ онъ и день и ночь;  
Миленькій его дружѣчекъ  
Отлетѣлъ надѣлго прочь.

*Дмитріевъ.*

Всѣхъ цвѣточковъ бѣлъ  
Рѣзу я любилъ;  
Ею только въ полѣ  
Взоръ мой веселилъ.

*Дмитріевъ.*

Мы сердцами  
И слезами  
Молимъ васъ,  
Бѣги гнѣва  
И Зрѣва,  
Въ страшный часъ.

*Карамзинъ.*

7. The *dactylic* verses, composed of dactyls alone, are only used with two, three or four feet, when longer they become fatiguing to the ear; e. g.

— 00 — 00 — 00 | — 00

Бѣже! Царя храни!  
Сильный, державный,  
Царствуй на славу намъ;  
Царствуй на стрѣхъ врагамъ;  
Царь православный.  
Бѣже! Царя храни!

*Жуковскій.*

О домовитая лѣсточка!  
Маленька, сізенька птичка!  
Грудь краснобѣла, косѣточка,  
Лѣтняя гѣстѣя, пѣвичка!

*Державинъ.*

Рѡза ль, ты рѡзочка, рѡза душистая,  
 Всѣмъ ты красавица, рѡза цвѣтокъ,  
 Вѣйся, плетися съ лилеей и ландышемъ,  
 Вѣйся, плетися въ мой пышный вѣнокъ.

Баронъ Дельвицъ.

8. The *dactylo-choraic* verses of four, three and two feet, are more commonly met with than the pure dactyls, and are used in songs, odes and other lyric poems; e. g.

— 00 | — 00 | — 00 — 01      0

Гдѣ ты, прекрасная, гдѣ обитаешь?  
 Тамъ ли, гдѣ пѣсни поётъ Филомела,  
 Крѡткая нѣчи пѣвица,  
 Сидя на миртовой вѣтви?

Карамзинъ.

Пчѣлка златая,  
 Что ты жужжишь?  
 Всѣ вокругъ летая,  
 Прочь не летишь.

Державинъ.

9. The *amphibrachic* verses of six and five feet are employed in idyls, epistles, elegies; and those of four, three and two feet in various lyrical compositions; e. g.

Въ часы пированья, при сладостномъ пѣніи струнъ оживлённыхъ,  
 Уныніе мрачно на мигъ не оставило милого гостя.  
 Снѣдающа горестъ лежитъ глубоко въ его сѣрдцѣ!  
 Умолкните, пѣсни! да чистую радость раздѣлять согласно.

Мерзляковъ,

Владыка Морвѣны  
 Жилъ въ дѣдовскомъ замкѣ могучій Ордалъ.  
 Надъ озеромъ стѣны  
 Зубчатые замокъ съ холма возвышалъ.

Жуковскій.

Въ то время съ весною  
Любовь насъ ждала:  
Въ то время . . . со мною  
Подруга жила.

Мих. Дмѣтріевъ.

10. The *anapæstic* verses from one to four feet are used in odes and also in fables; e. g.

Посмотри,  
И держи ты въ умѣ,  
Нѣсь мужикъ пуда три  
На продажу свинцѣ въ небольшой котомѣ.

Сумароковъ.

The *anapæstic* line is sometimes used alternately with the *amphibrachic*; e. g.

Не стремись добродѣтель напрасно  
Людей отъ неправды унять.  
Въ нихъ пороки плодятся всечасно:  
Нельзя ихъ ничѣмъ исправлять.

Богдановичъ.

11. The *anapæsto-iambic* verses are oftener employed than the above mentioned; e. g.

Ты бѣги, бѣги, нашъ злодѣй отъ насъ;  
Не дадимъ тебѣ поругаться намъ.  
Ты взгляни, взгляни на солдатъ своихъ  
Между реберъ ихъ ужъ трава растётъ.

Шулѣнниковъ.

102. The *cæsura* (пресѣченіе) is a rest which divides the line of poetry into two parts, each of which is called a *hemistich* or half verse. This rest, which is only found in the *iambic* verses of



six and of five feet, and in the trochaic verses of six feet, requires the word to be finished after the third foot in lines of six feet, and after the second in lines of five. Ех. .

Изъ мрачныхъ нздръ земныхъ | исходитъ бурный пламень;  
Кустарники дрожатъ, | о камень бьется камень.

*Херасковъ.*

И щитъ и мечъ | бросають съ знаменами;  
Вездѣ пути | покрыты ихъ костями.

*Жуковский.*

Здѣсь Гименъ прикованъ, | блѣдный и безгласный,  
Гасятъ у гробницы | свой свѣтильникъ ясный.

*Батюшковъ.*

Though it is not absolutely necessary that the cæsure should be always marked so distinctly, still the syllable terminating the first hemistich can never be united with that commencing the second; thus the cæsure can never come between a preposition and its complement.

Termination  
of the  
verses.

103.—The syllable terminating a line of poetry may be either strong or accented, or it may be weak or unaccented. In the former case the termination is *masculine*, and in the latter *feminine*; e. g.

Люблю, любить ввѣкъ буду!	<i>fem. term.</i>
Кляните страсть мою,	<i>masc. term.</i>
Безжалостныя дѣши,	<i>fem. term.</i>
Жестокия сердца!	<i>masc. term.</i>

*Карамзинъ.*

From this double termination it results that lines of the same metre have not always the same number of syllables. Iambic verses of six feet have twelve syllables with the masculine termination, and thirteen with the feminine; those of four feet have eight syllables with the masculine and nine

with the feminine. Choraic verses of four feet have seven syllables with the masculine termination, and eight with the feminine. The same rule applies equally to the other verses.

104.—The uniformity of sound in the words terminating lines of poetry forms *rhyme* (рифма), which is also *masculine* or *feminine*, according to the termination of the verse; e. g.

Кто будетъ принимать мой пепелъ отъ костра?	} <i>masc. rhyme.</i>
Кто будетъ безъ тебя, о милая сестра,	
За гробомъ слѣдовать въ одеждѣ погребальной,	} <i>fem. rhyme.</i>
И мѣро изливать надъ ўрною пелачной?	

Батюшковъ.

Rhymes were introduced into the poetry of such modern tongues as could not imitate the Greek and Latin versification, because, the language of poetry differing in them but little from prose, something was requisite to please the ear; in Russian however, where the accent is strongly marked and supplies the place of quantity, rhyme is not absolutely necessary; the same is the case in English and German, while in French rhyme is indispensable. Poetry without rhyme is called *blank verses* (бѣлые стихи). Verses which in Russian poetry are always written without rhyme, are the hexameters and those imitating metres of the ancient languages.

105.—According to the various combinations of the masculine and feminine rhymes, they are divided into *consecutive* (парные стихи), *alternate* (переступные) and *mixed* (смѣшанные). This combination of rhymes is used chiefly in stanzas. A *stanza* or *strophe* consists of a number of verses expressing a complete idea. It varies in length from four to fourteen lines. We here give an example of the strophe of four lines in alternate rhymes, and another of the strophe of fourteen lines, in mixed rhymes and choraic metre.

Бсе вѣкругъ уныло! Чуть зефиръ весённый  
 Памятникъ лобзаетъ;  
 Здѣсь въ жилищѣ плача, тихій смѣрти гѣній  
 Розу обрываетъ.

*Батюшковъ.*

Разъ въ Крещёнский вечерокъ  
 Дѣвушки гадали:  
 За ворота башмачокъ,  
 Снявъ съ ногъ, бросали;  
 Связъ пололи; подъ окномъ  
 Слушали; кормили  
 Счётнымъ кўрицу зерномъ;  
 Яркій воскъ топили;  
 Въ чашу съ чистою водою  
 Клали перстень золотой,  
 Сѣрѣги изумрудны;  
 Разстилали бѣлый платъ,  
 И надъ чашей пѣли въ ладъ  
 Пѣсенки подблюдны.

*Жуковскій.*

Poetic  
licenses.

102.—In following the above rules of versification the poet is at time compelled to sacrifice some of the minor principles of grammar, to syncopate terminations, and to place words in an inverted order. These sacrifices to number, harmony, rhyme and elegance, are termed *poetic licenses* (стихотворческія вольности).

# CORRECT CONSTRUCTION

## EXERCISES

We started for Potsdam on horseback yesterday at six o'clock in the morning. Nothing can be duller than this road; there is nothing but deep sand everywhere and not a single object of interest meets the eye. The view of Potsdam however, and particularly that of Sans-Souci is very fine. We stopped at an hotel, before arriving to the gates of the town. After resting ourselves and ordering our dinner, we entered the town. At the gate our names were written down. On the parade square, opposite the palace, which is adorned with Roman colonnades, the guards were exercising: the men are superb, and the uniforms splendid. The view of the palace from the garden is very fine. The town is generally speaking well built; in the principal street there are several magnificent houses constructed on the plan of the largest palaces of Rome at the expense of the late king: he gave them to any one he chose. At present these vast edifices are empty or only occupied by soldiers. — At Potsdam there is a Russian church under the care of a Russian soldier, who has lived there from the time of the Empress Anne. We had some difficulty in finding him. The decrepit old man was seated in a large arm-chair, and having heard that we are Russians, he extended his hands towards us and exclaimed with a trembling voice: "Glory to God! Glory to God!" He tried at first to speak

Reading-  
Exercise.  
p 18

with us in Russian; but we had difficulty in understanding each other. We were obliged to repeat almost every word. "Let us go into the temple of God", said he, "and let us pray together, though there is no church festival to-day." My heart was filled with devotion, when I saw the door of this church opened, where solemn silence has reigned so long, scarcely broken by the low sighs and the feeble voice of the old man in prayer, who comes every Sunday to read in this spot the holiest of books, which prepares him for a happy eternity. In the church every thing is neat and clean. The books and the church ornaments are kept in a trunk. The old man arranges them from time to time reverently praying. "It often grieves me to the heart", said he, "to think that after my death, which cannot be far distant, no one will take care of this church." We remained half an hour in this holy spot; then bidding the venerable old man adieu, we wished him a peaceful death.

*Karamzin.*

Exercises on  
declension of  
substantives

P. 58.

Хозяинъ сада и хозяйка дома. Садъ хозяина и домъ хозяйки. Рыканіе львовъ; пѣніе соловья; мычаніе быка, вола и коровы; ржаніе лошадей; лай собаки; воркованье голубя; карканье вороновъ; кваканье лягушекъ; вой волка; жужжаніе пчѣль, жуковъ и мухъ; блеяніе барановъ и овецъ. Каминъ безъ огня; окна безъ стѣколъ; каша безъ масла; сѣдла безъ стремени; зарядъ безъ пули; острова и луга безъ деревьевъ; повара, кучера и работники безъ работы; дѣти безъ матери; солдаты безъ ружей; ружья безъ кремней; статуя безъ рукъ и безъ ушей; медвѣжата и львенки безъ шерсти; корабли безъ коекъ; суда безъ веселъ; чай безъ сахара и безъ сливокъ. Пухъ перьевъ; дюжина чашекъ, тарелокъ и стакановъ; сотня форелей; десятковъ дынь; множество гусей, утокъ и лебедей; стада скота; табуны лошадей. Мужья древности, и мужья жѣнь. Цвѣты садовъ, и цвѣта радуги. Листы бумага, и листья деревъ. Зубы во рту, и зубья у гребня. Колѣна Израильянъ, колѣни у человека, и колѣнья растенія. Ловъ сельдей у береговъ Америки былъ очень выгоденъ для Англичанъ, Шведовъ, Голландцевъ и Французовъ.

Совѣтъ друзьямъ. Слава Бѣгу. Горѣ врагамъ. Приказъ войску. Повиновеніе законамъ. Дай вѣсть гусямъ, курамъ, голубямъ и щенкамъ. Поступать сооумѣстительно правиламъ

чести. Жить прилично состоянію. Законъ, дѣнный какъ дворянамъ, такъ и мѣщанамъ. Протѣвѣтся желаніямъ дѣтѣй, и воля родителей. Книги, перья и тетради принадлежатъ ученикамъ, а не учителямъ. Поля и луга принадлежатъ отцу и матери, а сады, какъ и лѣса, сыновьямъ и дочерямъ. Нравится мужчинамъ, и не нравится женщинамъ. Зелень нравится глазамъ. Картины нравятся сестрамъ, а цветы братьямъ. Полѣзный отечеству; пріятный Богу и людямъ; вѣрный Государю; любезный друзьямъ; милый дѣтямъ. Человѣкъ познаётся по лицу, по голосу, по росту, по походкѣ и по тѣлодвиженіямъ. Туристы путешествуютъ по Швейцаріи, Франціи, Италіи, Германіи, Америкѣ и Египту.

Братья купили дома, сады, деревню и поля, а продали быковъ, коровъ, лошадей и карету. Читаетъ басню, рисовать картину, писать письма, играть пѣсню, чинить перья. Посыщаютъ братьевъ и сестеръ, матерей и дочерей, отцовъ и сыновей. Купить шляпу и шапку, перчатки и башмаки, чулки и подвязки. Завоеватель побѣдилъ войска, и покори́лъ народъ. Пётръ разбилъ Шведовъ, завоевалъ Эстляндію и Лифляндію, основалъ городъ Санктпетербургъ, и просвѣтилъ Россію. Россіяне побуждали Татаръ, Турокъ, Шведовъ, Французовъ и Персіянъ. Дожди освѣжаютъ землю, а холода истребляютъ саранчу.

Дѣти, будьте прилежны! Иванъ, прійди сюда! Воины, сражайтесь храбро! Боже, спаси Царя! Господи, помилуй меня!

Ученики пишутъ грифельмъ или перомъ и чернилами. Иванъ играетъ съ Алексѣемъ и съ Василіемъ, а Марья играетъ съ Софьею и съ Любовью. Пирогъ съ миндалемъ; горшокъ съ цвѣтами; кадка съ водою; человѣкъ съ умомъ и съ гениемъ; галерея съ картинами. Города съ кремлемъ и гаванью; деревья съ листьями, цвѣтами и плодами; кивера съ султанами; комната съ дверями; хлѣбъ съ солью; вода съ виномъ; вино съ водою; профессоръ съ учениками; письмо съ деньгами. Рисовать карандашѣмъ, писать кистью и красками. Купецъ торгуетъ саломъ, мыломъ, молокомъ, мукою, крупю, винами, пивомъ, сукнами, полотнами и кружевами, а сосѣди купца торгуютъ волами, баранами и лошадьми. Дворцы съ башнями; церкви съ колокольнями; дома съ окнами; зданія съ галереями; полки съ знаменами. Горы изобилуютъ золотомъ, серебромъ, мѣдью, желѣзомъ, ртутью и свинцомъ.

Басни о быкѣ и баранѣ, объ ослѣ и соловьѣ; о кузнечикѣ и муравьѣ; о дубѣ и тростникѣ; о лисицѣ и воронѣ, о волкѣ и ягнѣнкѣ. Сказки объ ангелѣ-хранителѣ, объ Иванѣ и Марьѣ; повѣсти о Сѣргѣи пустынникѣ, о героѣ и гѣни. Говорить объ играхъ, объ урокахъ, о времени, о мѣстѣ, объ обстоятельствахъ. Въ сочиненіи говорить много о чести и безчестіи, о добродѣтели и пороцѣ, о храбрости и малодушіи. Въ водѣ живутъ рыбы, лягушки и слизны, а въ лѣсѣ живутъ львы, медвѣди, лисицы и зайцы.

Книги ученика нравятся учителю. Свѣтъ солнца озаряетъ землю лучами. Цвѣта розы пріятны глазамъ. Друзья челоуѣчества дѣлають добро людямъ. Въ садѣ цвѣтутъ розы съ шипами; ибо нѣтъ розы безъ шиповъ. Дѣти умываются водою рѣки. Стаканъ съ водою стоитъ на столѣ комнаты. Слѣзы радости блестятъ въ глазахъ матери. Слава злодѣевъ непродолжительна; но имена благодѣтелей оіяють въ вѣчности. Счастье на землѣ состоитъ въ спокойствіи духа и въ чистотѣ совѣсти. Юноши любятъ пѣніе соловья, на берегу ручья, при свѣтѣ луны. Говорить правду есть долгъ дѣтей. Любить Бога сердцемъ и душою. Муравьи и бобры могутъ служить примѣромъ челоуѣку. Поѣздка въ Москву и въ Кіевъ. Входить въ библіотеку для чтенія. Подай учителю тетрадь со стихами на случай праздника. Надоно вставать утромъ, работать днѣмъ, отдыхать вѣчеромъ и спать ночью. Громъ пушекъ и звонъ колоколовъ возвестили гражданамъ о прибытіи побѣдителя враговъ отечества.

Exercises on  
the adjectives.  
p. 83.

Пустой карманъ; карманъ пустъ. Крепкій замокъ; замокъ крепокъ. Вѣрный слуга; слуга былъ вѣренъ. Мягкій воскъ; воскъ мягокъ. Спокойный сонъ; сонъ спокоенъ. Достойный сынъ; сынъ достоинъ. Истинный другъ; другъ истиненъ. Совершенный покой; покой будетъ совершенъ. Прозрачное стекло; стекло прозрачно. Дрѣвнее преданіе; преданіе было дрѣвнее. Тѣплое лѣто; лѣто будетъ тепло. Тупое перо; перо тупо. Вѣтхая хижина; хижина ветха. Синяя бумага; бумага синя. Новые дома; дома новы. Богатыя семьи; семьи были богаты. Красныя знамена; знамена будутъ красны.

Бѣлая бумага; бѣлѣйшая бумага; самая бѣлая бумага. Небѣ быстро, а Волга быстрѣе. Молоко жидко, а вода жиже. Глубокий ручей; глубочайшая рѣка. Дома высоки, а башни

выше. Хорошій чай; лучшій чай; самый лучшій чай. Собаки малы; кошки меньше; но мыши малѣйшія. Отецъ молодой; мать моложе; но сестра самая молодая. Сѣно дорого, а солома дороже. Молоко сладко; сахаръ слаще; но медъ самый сладкій.

Бѣловатая бумага; буроватые чернила; черноватая вода; краска синевата. Буренская коровка; маленькая лошадка; пѣгенькая лошадка; бѣденькая дѣвочка; старичекъ старенецъ: старушка добренька. Пребѣлая бумага; бумага бѣлехонька; пресухія дрова; дрова сухощенки.

Хозяинъ обширныхъ садовъ, и хозяйка новаго дома. Стаканъ хорошей воды и краснаго вина; цѣлые горшки свиного сала и еловой смолы. Дѣлай добро бѣднымъ дѣтямъ и дряхлымъ старикамъ, и не ходи по чужимъ полямъ. Вотъ домъ Князя Долгорукаго; вотъ дворецъ Графини Толстой, а вотъ обширныя сады молодыхъ Графовъ Заводовскихъ. Я дивился пріятному пѣнію прошлагодняго соловья. Чинить лебединое перо тупымъ ножикомъ. Вотъ гусиные перья, красные карандаши, толстыя тетради, дубовыя линейки и большіе циркули, а вотъ суконныя кафтаны, тафтяные платки, шелковые чулки, пуховыя шляпы, тонкія полотна и тончайшія кружева. Люби непорочныя нравы; читай полезныя книги; чтѣ старыхъ людей; хвали добрыхъ дѣла; береги честнаго и вернаго слугу. Подари новую книгу самому прилежному ученику. Ты хвалишь весеннюю погоду, ясность лѣтнихъ ночей, осеннюю прохладу и зимніе холода. Я уважаю славныхъ мужей и знаменитыхъ полководцевъ древнихъ временъ. Большіе маневры нынѣшняго года будутъ въ Красномъ Селѣ и на Дудергофской Горѣ.

Онъ выѣхалъ изъ отцова дома, и дѣлаетъ добро сестриной дочери. Онъ продалъ женино имѣніе братнину сыну. Посвящать Господни храмы и Божіи церкви. Повиноваться Господней волѣ, и познавать величество Божія имени. Первая Русская Грамматика была написана безсмертнымъ Ломоносовымъ, и Россійская Исторія Николаемъ Михайловичемъ Карамзинымъ. Сраженія съ Французами происходили подъ Бородинымъ и подъ Борисовымъ. Я живалъ въ Новогородѣ и въ Бѣльбозерѣ. Деревни Княгини Салтыковой лежатъ подъ городомъ Кашинымъ.



Вотъ лѣсъ шуба, соболья шапка, птичье гнѣздó, заячьи мѣхъ и слоновыя зубы. Пудъ оленьяго мяса, аршинъ воловьей кожи, и фунтъ телячьихъ мозговъ. Не ходи по волчьимъ слѣдамъ, и не входи въ медвѣжью берлогу. Разсужденіе о человѣчьемъ глазѣ и о рыбьей головѣ. Онъ торгуетъ рыбнымъ клеемъ, бычачьимъ саломъ, козыими шкурами и пѣтушьями грѣбнями.

Хвастунъ похожъ на сою, украшенную павлиньими перьями. Сосѣдовъ братъ прїѣхалъ изъ дальняго города, а сестра изъ дальней деревни. Иваново платье узко, но Петрово ещё уже. Добренькая старушка живётъ въ сырôмъ домѣ, лежащемъ подъ Царѣцкымъ селомъ. Я купилъ медвѣжью шубу съ бобрóвымъ воротникомъ, и бобрóвую шапку съ шелковою лентою. Вотъ прекрасная книга въ богатомъ софьянномъ переплетѣ. Гдѣ найдёмъ мы примѣръ чистѣйшаго самоотверженія, высшей любви къ отечеству?

Exercises  
on the  
numerals.  
P. 97.

У человѣка одинъ языкъ, одинъ носъ, два глаза, два уха, двѣ щеки, двѣ руки, двѣ ноги, десять пальцевъ на рукѣ и десять пальцевъ на ногѣ, тридцать два зуба, и семь позвонковъ. Въ високóсномъ годѣ четыре времени, двѣнадцать мѣсяцевъ; пятьдесятъ двѣ недѣли и два дня, или триста шестьдесятъ шесть дней, или восемь тысячъ семьсотъ восемьдесятъ четыре часа, или пятьсотъ двадцать семь тысячъ и сорокъ минутъ. Въ книгѣ сто листовъ безъ одного. Оба брата и обѣ сестры. Полтора часа, и полторы минуты. Два рубля съ половиною и три копейки съ половиною. Въ берковцѣ десять пудовъ; въ пудѣ сорокъ фунтовъ; въ фунтѣ тридцать два лóта; въ лóтѣ три золотника; въ фунтѣ девяносто шесть золотниковъ.

Двѣ пухóвыя шляпы, три шелковые платкá, четыре перочинныя ножи́ка, пять фарфóровыхъ чашекъ и шесть прекрасныхъ картинъ. Сїи два чѣрные ворона, тѣ три бѣлыя пера, мой четыре новыя книги; эти пять рѣзвыхъ дѣтѣй. Оба бѣдные сироты и обѣ несчастныя сироты. Двое слугъ, трое мастеровыхъ, четверо дѣтѣй, шестеро солдатъ, двѣи часы, трѣи очки, пятеры ножи́цы. Первые полтора часа. Первые сорокъ дней; второе сто ефимковъ, и послѣдняя тысяча гульденовъ.

Я купилъ одного быка и одну лошадь, одинъ столъ и одно зеркало. Двадцать одинъ рубль, пятьдесятъ одна копейка. Тысяча и одна ночь. Молодой человекъ тридцати одного года безъ двадцати одного дня. Не суди о человекѣ по одному проступку и по одной ошибкѣ. Офицеръ съ двадцатью однимъ солдатамъ. Пётръ Первый и Екатерина Вторая царствовали въ осмнадцатомъ вѣкѣ. Шведы уважаютъ Карла Двенадцатаго, а Французы поставили памятникъ Генриху Четвёртому. Статья была писана пятнадцатаго числа Января мѣсяца тысяча восемьсотъ двадцать третьяго года, и происшествіе относится къ шестому вѣку, а именно къ пятьсотъ семьдесятъ третьему году.

Шкапъ съ дюжиною фарфоровыхъ тарелокъ, или съ двѣнадцатью фарфоровыми тарелками. Дрожки, запряжённые парой воронихъ лошадей, или двумя вороними лошадьми; и карета, запряжённая шестью рыжими лошадьми, или шестью рыжихъ лошадей. Городъ лежитъ отсюда въ тысячу верстъ, село въ ста верстахъ, а деревня въ сорокъ верстахъ. Въ Москвѣ было тысяча шестьсотъ церквей, или сорокъ сороковъ церквей. Я довольствуюсь осмидесятью рублями (или двумя сороками рублей) въ мѣсяцъ, то есть девятью стами шестидесятью рублями въ годъ. Онъ не доживётъ до сорока лѣтъ; и она умерла сорока трёхъ лѣтъ. Она довольна сорока копейками, и она удивилась ста картинами. Онъ не можетъ прожить мѣнѣе ста тысячъ рублей въ годъ. Городъ съ двумя башнями; комодъ съ шестью ящиками; домъ съ сорока окнами; крѣпость со ста пушками; церковь о пяти главахъ; домъ о трёхъ ярусахъ; деревня съ четырьмя вѣтряными мельницами. Я люблю равно обѣихъ сыновей и обѣихъ дочерей. Онъ имѣетъ четверо дѣтей, а она оставила пятеро сиротъ. Мой братъ не могъ сладить съ этими двумя упрямыми лошадьми. Онъ жилъ долго съ своими пятью двоюродными братьями. Къ этому миллиону старыхъ Прусскихъ ефимковъ надобно прибавить тысячу тѣхъ новыхъ рублей.

Каждому по сту рублей и по сороку копѣекъ. Въ некоторыхъ мѣсяцахъ по тридцати дней, а въ другихъ по тридцати одному дню. Въ каждомъ сараѣ было по двѣ кареты, а въ каждой каретѣ по три мужіины и по четыре жѣнщины. Каждому по сту по девяносту рублей и по сороку по пяти копѣекъ.

У насъ по двадцати по семи очковъ. Каждая часть сочиненія продаётся по полутора рубля серебромъ.

По утру не должно судить о полудни. Въ первые полдня онъ не зналъ что дѣлать. Въ четыре часа по полуночи, или въ пять часовъ по полудни. Это случилось въ послѣднѣе полгода тысяча, восемьсотъ сорокъ четвертаго года. Первые полчаса прошли спокойно. Въ продолженіе первыхъ полчаса. За мною было полтора ста тысячъ рублей годоваго дохода.

Exercises  
on the  
pronouns.  
p. 107.

Я люблю тебя, а ты меня обижаешь. Мы уважаемъ его, а её мы любимъ душевно. У меня много денегъ, а у тебя нѣтъ ни копѣйки. Заступись за него, и понадейся на неё. Посиди со мною, и приходи съ нимъ. Скажи ей, чтобъ она пришла ко мнѣ. Безъ него, безъ ней и безъ васъ жизнь мнѣ скучна. Я не вижу ихъ, а я сдѣлаю всё для нихъ. Мы уважаемъ васъ, а вы забыли насъ. Будь во мнѣ увѣренъ: я поговорю о тебѣ. Мнѣ пріятно быть съ нѣю. Я не доверяю себѣ, а ты доволенъ собою. Мы бережемъ себя, а они себѣ вредятъ.

Мой братъ, твои сестра и его сынъ вмѣстѣ учились. Я стараюсь угодить вашему учителю и нашему смотрителю. Мой домъ красивѣе твоего, а твой собака меньше моей. Я живу безъ нихъ, и могу обойтись безъ ихъ помощи. Не хвались своими трудами, а подумай о своихъ лѣтахъ. Подойди къ моему столу, и подарь денегъ своей сестрѣ. Мы говоримъ о своихъ дѣлахъ, а вы занимаетесь своимъ урокомъ. Ученіе горько, но плоды его сладки. Твои сады прекрасны; я удивляюсь ихъ красотамъ.

Видишь ли эту собаку и этого кота, этихъ людей и тѣхъ деревьевъ? Въ этихъ земляхъ нѣтъ золота, и въ тѣхъ нѣтъ серебра. Я слышалъ это отъ вашего брата, но я этому не вѣрю. Я хвалю ваше намѣреніе; давно я предвидѣлъ оно. Давно ли ты живешь въ семъ городѣ? Я удивляюсь этому саду, а тотъ лучше. Эти перья тупы; сии дома каменные; тѣ улицы узки. Такіе глаза пронзительны; такія дѣла не приносятъ чести. Таковы люди.

Человѣкъ, котораго вы видите, очень умѣнъ. Книга, которую вы читаете, очень пріятна. Я знаю дѣло, о которомъ вы говорите. Вода, которою я моюсь, очень холодная. Берегись того, кто льститъ тебѣ. Тотъ, у кого много дѣла, не думаетъ о забавахъ. Учитесь тому, чего вы не знаете.

Вотъ такое сукно, какое я купилъ. Какое былъ военачальникъ, таковы и воины. Вотъ другъ, въ чьихъ рукахъ моя судьба. Слушайся того, въ чьемъ домѣ ты жилъ. Вотъ книга, какихъ мало, и случай, каковыя рѣдки.

Который часть, и въ которомъ часу прийдешь? Какими книгами занимаешься, и какіе люди здѣсь живутъ? Подъ которыми начальникомъ ты служишь, и какому языку ты учишься? Чьи эти дома? Съ чего позволенія ты вышелъ со двора? Я не видалъ, чью шляпу бросили на полъ. Я не знаю, съ чьими детьми онъ гуляетъ. О чемъ ты заботишься, и чѣмъ я заслужилъ твою дружбу? Съ чѣмъ можно поздравить тебя, и отъ чего ты получилъ эти деньги? Сколько верстъ отъ этого города до того? Изъ сколькихъ томовъ состоитъ сіе сочиненіе? По сколько рублей достанется вамъ изъ этой прибыли?

Ты самъ согласишься со мною: самый звукъ его голоса пріятенъ. Я нанимаю сію квартиру у самого хозяина. Самые пороки находятъ у васъ извѣненіе. Онъ всегда говоритъ о себѣ самомъ. Вы недовольны собою самими. Мы видѣли её самоё. Самая смерть не страшна. Мы всѣ довольствуемся однимъ жалованіемъ. Такъ думаютъ однѣ женщины. Мы оба хотимъ служить единому Богу. Въ каждомъ собраніи были граждане обоёго пола. Они разсыяны по всему свѣту. Надобно привыкать ко всякой пищѣ.

Нѣтъ никого здѣсь; не проси помощи ни у когô. Ты не знаешь ничего, и это не годится ни къ чему. Учись чему нибудь, и скажи это кому нибудь. Я не продамъ своего дома ни за что, и вы продали свой за ничто. Изъ ничего не сделаешь ничего. Въ теченіе нѣсколькихъ мѣсяцевъ онъ ежедневно купалъ по нѣскольку сотъ душъ.

Объ сестры дурно говорятъ другъ о другѣ. Англичане и Французы ненавидятъ другъ друга. Мы ходимъ гулять другъ съ другомъ. Сіи дома лежатъ одинъ за другимъ. Доски набросаны одна съ другою.

Я делаю добро, сколько я желаю. Ты желаешь учиться. Онъ думаетъ, что знаетъ всѣ науки, и хвастаетъ своими успѣхами. Мы не дерзваемъ вѣрить вашимъ словамъ, хотя вы говорите правду. Мои сосѣди питаются однимъ хлѣбомъ, и уповаютъ на Провидѣніе. Вы торгуете сукномъ, и вы требуете

многого. Голубь воркуетъ; горлица стонетъ; собака лаетъ; щенки брешутъ; лягушки квакають; вороны каркають; лвы рыкають; олень токуетъ; куры кудахчутъ; кошка мяучить; быки мычатъ; пчела жужжитъ; змѣя шипитъ; орлы трубятъ; соловей щебечутъ; овцы блеютъ; свиньи хрюкають; лисица визжитъ; осёл ревётъ; калкунъ клохчетъ; перепёлка ваваетъ; птухъ кукурекаетъ; сорока скрекочетъ; попугай болтаетъ. Громъ гремитъ; вода кипитъ; дѣри скрипятъ; ручьи жужжатъ; огонь трещитъ; звѣзды сверкають; солнце свѣтитъ; пчѣлы роются; алмазы блестятъ; сухіе листья хрущатъ; вѣтеръ свистаетъ; снѣгъ таетъ. Солнце озаряетъ землю своими лучами, грѣетъ и живитъ её.\* Земля обращается вкругъ солнца. Вы напрасно горюете.

Я гулялъ вчера по берегу рѣки, когда солнце садилось. Моя сестра сидѣла подѣ деревомъ, которое качалось вѣтромъ. Вчера мы много работали, читали, писали и рисовали. Овцы мрутъ отъ стужи. Его мать давно умерла. Непріатели заперли его въ крѣпости. Этотъ человекъ ослѣпъ, и его жена оглохла. Мои деревья высохли и мои цвѣты завяли.

Москва долго будетъ красоваться во главѣ городовъ Русскихъ. Ты будешь играть, и я буду писать. Россійское государство будетъ непрерывно возвышаться, и всегда приобретётъ болѣе силы и славы. Великій государь никогда не умрётъ.

Дѣлай, что тебѣ говорятъ, и не думай упрямиться. Не теряй надежды, и уповай на Бога, Ступайте домой, и не толкуйте столько. Не трать времени, и не мучь жинотныхъ. Говорите всегда правду, и не спорьте о пустякахъ.

Соловей поётъ; лошадь ржётъ; волкъ воетъ. Есть звѣри, которые спятъ всю зиму. Ты берѣшь много на себя, и я не берусь за это дѣло. Зачѣмъ вы имѣете эту книгу? Онъ живётъ въ Москвѣ, и слывётъ богатымъ человекомъ. Пастухъ стрижётъ овецъ; крестьяне прядутъ лёнъ и ткутъ холстъ. Онъ хочетъ спать, и вы хотите играть. Мой сосѣдъ берѣгъ меня, какъ роднаго сына, и не могъ со мною, разстаться. Непріатели сожгли многіе города; они увлеклись злобою и мщеніемъ. Пастухъ пасъ овецъ на лугу. Я пошлю за лѣкаремъ, и ты пришлѣшь мнѣ денегъ. Этотъ городъ цвѣтѣтъ, и онъ долго будетъ цвѣсти сіюю, и богатствомъ. Я дамъ

тебѣ книгу, а что ты дашь мнѣ? Ты не можешь говорить: что онъ дастъ мнѣ за это? Не бери на себя того, чего ты не можешь исполнить. Дѣти, живите мирно, не клянитесь, никогда не лгите, и ведите себя хорошенько.

Звѣри ходятъ и бѣгаютъ, птицы летаютъ, рыбы плаваютъ, и черви ползаютъ. Посмотри, куда идётъ солдатъ; за нимъ бѣжитъ собака. Видишь, какъ быстро летитъ эта ласточка; онъ всегда такъ летаетъ. Сей морякъ долго плавалъ по Чёрному Морю. Что тамъ плывётъ на водѣ? Жёны Славянъ носили воду и таскали дрова. Что ты несёшь въ этомъ мышкѣ? Смотри, какую вязанку дровъ этотъ человекъ тащить. Видѣли тогда, чего не видѣли дотолѣ.

Непріятель ринулся въ городъ и кинулся на корысть. Молнія засверкала. Молнія сверкнула, грянулъ сильный громъ, земля дрогнула, церковь затряслась. Братъ мой лёгъ и захрапѣлъ; онъ громко храпнулъ и проснулся. Могутъ ли надѣяться, что лира моя тронетъ ещё ваше хладное сердце? Солнце заблестало, но не надолго: блеснуло и скрылось. Мы выбросали за окно весь соръ; въ соръ мы выбросили и важную бумагу.

Прошлаго года я хаживалъ въ городъ. Сократъ говаривалъ. Нѣмцы издавна живали въ Новгородъ. Живучіи въ Москвѣ, я взжалъ въ Троицкую Лавру. Въ молодыя лѣта я живалъ въ деревнѣ.

Если бы камни говорить могли, оніи научили бы тебя осторожности. Если бы кто нибудь вошёлъ къ намъ въ эту минуту, онъ увидѣлъ бы насъ въ отчаяніи, и слышалъ бы наши стенанія и наши вздохи. Есть мало предметовъ въ свѣтъ, на которые я не обращалъ бы вниманія. Нѣ было такого каменнаго сердца, которое не изливалось бы въ слезахъ.

Солдатъ этотъ служилъ долго, и выслужилъ пенсію. Не всякій выслужить её съ такимъ отличіемъ. Онъ бывалъ во многихъ сраженіяхъ, и вездѣ отличался блистательною храбростью. Особенно отличился онъ при взятіи одной непріятельской батарееи. Онъ первый взобрался на брустверь, убилъ непріятельскаго солдата и взялъ пушку. За это его наградили орденомъ. Потомъ награждали его и другими отличіями. Теперь отправится онъ въ родину, поселится въ своей семьѣ, и будетъ рассказывать о своихъ походахъ, какъ хаживалъ на Турокъ и Французовъ, какъ бивалъ враговъ.

какъ терпѣлъ голодъ, страдалъ отъ ранъ, и утѣшался мыслію, что служить своему Государю сердцемъ и душою. Уповай на меня.

Exercises  
on the  
participles.  
p. 176.

Человѣкъ, любящій правду, ненавидитъ ложь. Купающееся дитя; соба́ка, бросающаяся на прохожихъ. Купе́цъ, получа́вший товары изъ Лондона, продава́лъ ихъ выгодно. Купе́цъ, получи́вший товары изъ Лондона, прода́лъ ихъ выгодно. Стра́ждущій болѣзнію, ищетъ облегче́нія. Зажги поту́хшую свѣчу, и вытри замёрзшее стекло. Слава геро́ю, спаса́емому свое́ отечество. Рыка́ющий левъ, мыча́щий быкъ, ла́ющая соба́ка, пою́щий пѣтухъ, ворку́ющий голубъ, выража́ютъ свои чувства и желанія.

Море, волнуемое вѣтрами, устрашаетъ пловцевъ. Дочь, любимая отцемъ, старается заслуживать его любовь. Должно помогать несчастному, гонимому судьбою и преследуемому неудачами. Это снятое молоко, и вотъ тѣртый табакъ. Это заряженное ружье. На рынкѣ продаются битые гуси, смолёныя верёвки, откормленныя поросята и стриженныя овцы.

Россія обитаема многими народами. Добрые государи любимы своими подданными, и уважаемы соседями. Татары были побѣждены и разбиты на Куликовомъ полѣ. Труды твои будутъ увѣнчаны успѣхомъ. Имена бывають склоняемы, а глаголы спрягаемы. Сей великій полководецъ будетъ чтимъ въ потомствѣ. Москва была разорена и сожжена врагами. Это ружье заряжено. Эта книга прекрасно переплетена.

Exercises on  
adverbs and  
gerunds.  
p. 181.

Поди сюда, ибо я здѣсь живу. Гдѣ вашъ братъ? Его нѣтъ дома. Куда онъ поѣхалъ вчера вечеромъ? Ты судишь умно, а братъ твой судитъ умнѣе. Я хожу шибко, а ты ходишь шибче. Вы говорите по-ру́сски чисто, а сестрица ва́ша ещё чище. Завтра поѣдемъ мы далѣко, а чрезъ годъ ещё далѣе. Ты поѣшь хорошó, но она́ поѣтъ лу́чше. Я прошу васъ убѣдительно́йше. Я благодарю васъ покорнѣйше.

Гуляя на берегу рѣки, я наслаждаюсь прохладою вѣсера. Жалѣя о несчастныхъ, старайтесь помогать имъ. Я васъ учу́, желая вамъ добра́, и надѣясь, что вы успѣете въ наукахъ. Не уми́я сдѣлать чего вибуди́, проси́ совѣта, не краси́я. Дѣлай добро́, не бойсь никого́. Не должно́ встѣ ле́жа. Служа́ отечеству и умира́я за негó, мы исполня́емъ свой долгъ.

Получивъ письмо ваше, и узнавъ, чего вы желаете, я немедленно отвѣчалъ. Отобѣдавши, останься дома. Написавши письмо, положивши въ кувертъ и запечатавши, отдай его на почту. Пришедши домой, я сѣлъ писать. Женівшись, онъ поѣхалъ въ деревню. Просидѣвши часъ у него, я пошелъ домой; раздѣвшись и легши, я скоро уснулъ.

Безъ надежды нельзя жить въ свѣтъ. Отъ рѣки до лѣсу двѣ версты. О чѣмъ вы говорите? Мы трудимся для общаго блага. Между домомъ и садомъ пространный дворъ съ конюшнями. Бога ради не унывай. Любовь къ государю и отечеству. Онъ живѣтъ у своего дяди. Солдатъ высочилъ изъ-за куста. Лучъ солнечный проникаетъ сквозь воду. Этотъ человѣкъ при смерти. Птица летаетъ подъ облаками. Я положилъ книгу подъ столъ. Садитесь за столъ, и сидите за столомъ. Братъ мой ѣдетъ въ Москву, потому что его жена живѣтъ въ Москвѣ. Орелъ сидитъ на деревѣ. Эта рѣчка разбилась на мелкія части. Я досажуюсь на брата моего за его лѣность. Не заботься о чужихъ дѣлахъ. Мой другъ ушибся объ уголъ стола. Вода течетъ съ кровли. Вотъ деревья съ листьями, но безъ цвѣтовъ. Эта собака будетъ съ корову. Дѣти бѣгаютъ по двору и по саду. Мы работали отъ перваго по пятое число Августа. Онъ носитъ трауръ по своему брату.

Мой дядя родился и жилъ въ Москвѣ, а не въ Твери. Знаешь ли что нашъ учитель нездоровъ? Ежели вы не придете, то я осержусь. Спроси у него, хочетъ ли онъ ѣхать, или намзревается остаться дома. Онъ заботится болѣе о братѣ нежели о сестрѣ. Прийтие дѣлать добро другимъ, чѣмъ самому получать благотворенія. Пусть онъ придетъ; пускай они уѣдутъ. Да солнце васъ не застанетъ на ложѣ. Да здравствуетъ Царь. Чѣмъ прилежнѣе ты будешь учиться, тѣмъ легче будетъ для тебя ученіе.

Зима пріятна. Люди суть смертны. Новгородъ былъ богатымъ. Россія есть обширная имперія. Волга есть царица рѣкъ Русскихъ. Пріятель мой, вы будете довольны. У насъ есть большіе запасы. У меня завтра будутъ деньги. Ея Величество (Императрица) выѣхала. Его Превосходительство (Генералъ) уѣхалъ. Его Императорское Высочество (Великій Князь) былъ доволенъ. Географія и Исторія суть

Exercises on  
the preposi-  
tions. p.185.

Exercises on  
the conjunc-  
tions. p.188.

Exercises on  
the concord  
of words.  
P. 192.



весьма полезныя знанія. Молчать трудно. Сколько было тамъ дѣтей? Москва знаменита; городъ Москва знаменитъ. Китай многолюдненъ; государство Китай многолудно. У него есть тридцать одна лошадь. Книга, которую вы читаете, очень забавна. Вотъ человекъ, чьиими трудами пользуемся.

Exercises on  
dependence  
of words.  
p. 200.

Вода есть стихія. Александръ Македонскій былъ великій полководецъ. Татары были свирѣпы. Мои два офицера; мой дядь былъ тогда офицеромъ. Говорятъ, что кометы были или еще будутъ планетами.

Дождь освяжаетъ землю. Злодѣи ненавидятъ честныхъ людей. Буря, опустошившая наши поля, разорила многихъ поселянъ. Говори всегда правду. Мой братъ былъ боленъ всю зиму. Я ѣхалъ цѣлую версту верхомъ. Тебя хвалятъ за прилежаніе. Онъ ударился объ стѣну. Мы сидимъ въ водѣ по шею. Сынъ ростомъ съ отца, и дочь почти съ мать.

Скупѣцъ предпочитаетъ деньги славу, а воинъ славу деньгамъ. Молнія предшествуетъ грому. Дивлюсь вашему терпѣнію. Нравятся ли вамъ эти картины. Не мсти твоему непріятелю, и дѣлай добро обидѣвшему тебя. Быть чуду. Литься горячимъ слезамъ. Ребенку хочется пить. Сильному человеку не прилично обижать слабаго. Подражаніе Иисусу Христу. Любовь къ добродѣтели и ненависть къ пороку.

Вѣжу глазами, осязаю руками, слышу ушами, обоняю носомъ, вкушаю языкомъ. Измаилъ былъ взятъ Суворовымъ, и Очаковъ Потемкинымъ. Э тихъ офицеровъ всѣ называютъ героями. Большой едва шевелитъ губы (или губами). Гнушаюсь обманомъ и ложію. Здѣсь дышать чистымъ воздухомъ. Пожертвованіе жизнью за Государа и отечество. Онъ добръ сердцемъ, но слабъ головою. Утромъ надобно вставать, днемъ работать, вечеромъ отдыхать, и ночью спать. Помири моего друга съ его дядею. Имѣю честь поздравить васъ съ вашими успѣхами.

Сынъ моего искреннаго друга вчера уѣхалъ. Дѣти большаго ума нерѣдко бывають хилы. Составленъ списокъ офицерамъ нашей дивизіи. Печеніе хлѣба. Я купилъ фунтъ чаю и сажень дровъ. Столько трудовъ и заботъ пропало попустому. Русскіе взяли Парижъ осьмнадцатаго Марта тысяча восемьсотъ четырнадцатаго года. Я не емъ хлѣба, но пью воду. Я емъ хлѣбъ, но не пью воды. Я не получалъ ни

письма, ни посылки. Въ этомъ письмѣ нѣтъ ни одной ошибки. Достань мнѣ денегъ. Воины желаютъ битвы и ищутъ славы. Славолюбецъ жаждетъ почестей. Ты хочешь богатства, и бойшься труда. Бочка полна вина. Добрый человекъ чуждъ злобы и зависти. Золото дороже серебра; свинецъ тяжелѣе желѣза. Онъ проситъ милостыни ради Христа. О тдыхъ приятенъ послѣ работы. Вдоль этого берега тянется цѣпь горъ. Волки бродятъ около деревни.

Мой братъ хранитъ присутствіе духа при всѣхъ непріятностяхъ въ жизни. Сей городъ построенъ на крутомъ берегу быстрой рѣки. Церковь о пяти главахъ. Онъ плачетъ по своему отцу.

### Волшебница.

Одна вдова имѣла двухъ дочерей: старшая была похожа на свою мать и лицѣмъ и нравомъ, то есть, она была такъ же дурна и такъ же зла, какъ ея мать. Никто не любилъ ихъ: всѣ отъ нихъ бѣжали. Меньшая же была прекрасна и добродушна. Всѣ ея любили. Но злая мать и злая сестра ея ненавидѣли; безпрестанно бранили; одна она должна была работать въ домѣ, топить печь, мести горницы, стрѣпать въ кухнѣ. Бѣдная плакала съ утра до вечера, но не лѣнилась работать; была послушна, терпѣлива, и всё то было напрасно, ибо ничѣмъ не могла угодить на злую мать и на злую сестру свою.

Ежедневно эта бѣдная дѣвушка должна была, съ большимъ кувшиномъ, ходить за водою въ ближнюю рощу, въ которой находился чистый источникъ. Однажды пошла она, по обыкновенію, къ этому источнику. День былъ очень жарокъ. Наполнивъ кувшинъ водою, она возвращалась домой. Вдругъ видитъ передъ собою старушку. «Дитя моё!» — сказала ей старушка: — «дай мнѣ напиться. Я устала; мнѣ жарко.» — «Съ охотою, бабушка!» сказала дѣвушка: «вотъ! напейся!» И она подала старушкѣ кувшинъ.

Старушка отъ слабости сѣла на траву, а молодая красавица стала передъ нею на колѣни, и осторожно поддѣрживала кувшинъ, пока она пила воду. — «Благодарю тебя, милая!»

сказала старушка, напившись: «Вижу, что ты доброе, ласковое дитя, и хочу тебя наградить за твою услужливость. Знай же, я волшебница, и нарочно взяла на себя вид старушки, чтобы тебя испытать. Радуюсь, что ты такая добрая, и вот, что я хочу для тебя сделать: всякий раз, когда ты скажешь слово, изо рта у тебя выпадет или прекрасный цветок, или драгоценный камень, или большая жемчужина. Прости, дружок!» И волшебница исчезла.

Прекрасная девушка возвратилась домой. «Где ты так долго была?» спросила у нея с сердцем мать. — «Что ты так долго делала в роще?» закричала злая сестра. — «Виновата, замешкалась!» отвечала бедняжка, и в ту самую минуту с прекрасных губ ее скатились две розы, две жемчужины и два больших изумруда. — «Что я вижу?» воскликнула удивленная мать. «Это цветы! Это драгоценные камни! Что с тобою случилось!» — Красавица просто душою рассказала ей о своей встрече с волшебницею, а между тем цветы, алмазы и жемчуг так и сыпались с губ ее. — «Хорошо же!» проворчала мать: «завтра пошлю в рощу старшую мою дочь, и с нею то же будет.»

И на другое утро, она сказала своей дочери: «Нынче пойдешь за водою ты: возьми кувшин; но смотри же, если встретишь у источника старушку, дай ей напиток и приласкайся к ней хорошенько.» Злая девочка нахмурилась, с досадою взяла кувшин; нехотя пошла в рощу, и во всю дорогу ворчала. Старушка сидела, уже у источника. «Зачерпни мне воды, моя милая!» сказала она девочке: «жарко, хочу напиться.» — «Как бы не так! Я не за тем пришла сюда, чтобы услуживать старым бродягам. Напьюсь и без тебя!» — «Какая же ты грубая!» сказала ей старушка: «Я накажу тебя. С этих пор, при каждом слов твоём, будет выпадать у тебя изо рта или змея или лягушка.» Она исчезла, а злая девочка побжала домой, разбивши с досады кувшин свой. «Что скажешь, милая дочка!» спрашивала мать, увидев её издалека. — «Нечего сказать!» отвечала дочь, и вдруг выскочили изо рта ее две змеи и две жабы! — «Что я вижу! какой страх!» закричала мать. «Но во всем этом виновата твоя сестра! Я дам ей знать.» И он бросились бить меньшую дочь. •

Она, испугавшись угрозы, скрылась въ рощу, долго бѣжала, не смѣя оглянуться, забѣжала далеко, и наконецъ потеряла дорогу. Но это было къ ея счастію. Царскій сынъ, который тутъ забавлялся охотою, находился въ это время въ рощѣ; онъ увидѣлъ красавицу, которая, сѣдя на травѣ, горько плакала. — «Что съ тобою сдѣлалось? о чѣмъ ты плачешь, милая?» спросилъ онъ, взявъ её ласково за руку. — «Боже мой! какъ мнѣ не плакать! Матушка выгнала меня изъ дому.» Она говорила, а цвѣты и драгоценные камни сыпались съ ея розовыхъ губъ, и слёзы обращались въ жемчужины. — «Что это значить?» спросилъ царскій сынъ: «отъ чего эти цвѣты, жемчуги и камни?» Бѣдняжка разсказала царскому сыну о томъ, что съ нею случилось. — Онъ полюбилъ её, и полюбилъ ещё болѣе за то, что она была такъ добра и мила, нежели за ея цвѣты и драгоценные камни. Онъ взялъ её съ собою, представилъ её Царю, отцу своему, которому она также понравилась, и Царь позволилъ сыну на ней жениться. Такимъ образомъ она сдѣлалась Царевною, а по смерти Царя, когда ея мужъ взошѣлъ на отцовскій престолъ, Царицею, и была Царицею доброю. А злая сестра ея? что сдѣлалось съ нею? — Она жалостнымъ образомъ кончила свою жизнь. Мать, которую она безпрестанно сердила и огорчала, принуждена была её выгнать изъ дому; никто не хотѣлъ ей дать пристанища, и она скрылась въ лѣсъ, гдѣ скоро умерла съ досады и голода.







## TABLE OF CONTENTS

### FIRST PART

#### LEXICOLOGY.

	Page
Division of the Grammar . . . . .	1
Sounds or letters . . . . .	2
Alphabet . . . . .	2
Division of the letters . . . . .	6
Pronunciation of the letters . . . . .	7
Vowels . . . . .	7
Semi-vowels . . . . .	11
Consonants . . . . .	13
Syllables and words . . . . .	17
Tonic accent . . . . .	17
<i>Reading-Exercise</i> . . . . .	18
Elements of speech . . . . .	22
Division of words . . . . .	23
Roots of words . . . . .	24
Inflections of words . . . . .	26
Metaplasms of words . . . . .	26
Permutation of letters . . . . .	26
Epenthesis and prosthesis . . . . .	28
Apocope and Syncope . . . . .	29
THE SUBSTANTIVE . . . . .	29
Division of substantives . . . . .	29
Properties of nouns . . . . .	30

	Page
Genders . . . . .	30
Aspects . . . . .	34
Numbers . . . . .	36
Cases . . . . .	37
Declension of substantives . . . . .	39
Regular substantives . . . . .	39
Rules of the declensions . . . . .	40
General rules . . . . .	41
Special rules . . . . .	42
Paradigms of the declensions of substantives . . . .	43
First declension . . . . .	43
Second declension . . . . .	48
Third declension . . . . .	50
Irregular nouns . . . . .	54
<i>Exercises in the declension of substantives</i> . . . . .	58
THE ADJECTIVE . . . . .	65
Division of the adjectives . . . . .	65
Qualifying adjectives . . . . .	65
Possessive adjectives . . . . .	65
Properties of adjectives . . . . .	67
Gender, number, case . . . . .	68
Apocope of the termination . . . . .	68
Degrees of signification . . . . .	69
Declension of adjectives . . . . .	75
Paradigms of the declensions of adjectives . . . .	76
First declension . . . . .	78
Second declension . . . . .	80
Third declension . . . . .	83
<i>Exercises on the adjectives</i> . . . . .	83
THE NUMERALS . . . . .	88
Division of numerals . . . . .	88
Cardinal and ordinal numerals . . . . .	89
Declension of the numerals . . . . .	91
Paradigms of the declension of the numerals . . . .	92
Special rules of the numerals . . . . .	95
<i>Exercises on the numerals</i> . . . . .	97
THE PRONOUN . . . . .	102
Division of the pronouns . . . . .	102

	Page
Paradigms of the declension of the pronouns . . .	104
Declension of the pronouns . . . . .	105
<i>Exercises on the pronouns</i> . . . . .	107
THE VERB . . . . .	112
Division of verbs . . . . .	112
Inflections of the verb . . . . .	113
Tenses . . . . .	113
Aspects . . . . .	113
Moods . . . . .	116
Persons, numbers and genders . . . . .	117
Forms derived from the verb . . . . .	118
Conjugation . . . . .	118
Regular verbs . . . . .	122
Formation of the inflections of the verb . . . . .	123
Paradigms of the conjugations of the regular verbs .	125
First conjugation . . . . .	128
Second conjugation . . . . .	130
Third conjugation . . . . .	136
Irregular verbs . . . . .	137
Conjugation of irregular verbs . . . . .	138
Delineation of verbs . . . . .	142
Simple verbs . . . . .	143
Prepositional verbs . . . . .	150
<i>Exercises on the verbs</i> . . . . .	166
THE PARTICIPLE . . . . .	173
Division of the participles . . . . .	173
Active and neuter participles . . . . .	173
Passive participles . . . . .	174
Declension of the participles . . . . .	175
Passive verbs . . . . .	176
<i>Exercises on the participles</i> . . . . .	176
THE ADVERB AND THE GERUND . . . . .	178
Division of the adverbs . . . . .	178
Formation of the adverbs . . . . .	179
Degrees of comparison . . . . .	180
Gerunds . . . . .	180
<i>Exercises on the adverbs and the gerunds</i> . . . . .	181
THE PREPOSITION . . . . .	183



	Page
Division of the prepositions . . . . .	183
Government of the prepositions . . . . .	185
<i>Exercises on the prepositions</i> . . . . .	185
THE CONJUNCTION . . . . .	187
<i>Exercises on the conjunctions</i> . . . . .	188
THE INTERJECTION . . . . .	188

## SECOND PART

### SYNTAX.

Division of syntax . . . . .	189
CONCORD OF WORDS . . . . .	189
<i>Exercises on the concord of words</i> . . . . .	192
DEPENDENCE OF WORDS . . . . .	193
Nominative . . . . .	194
Vocative . . . . .	195
Accusative . . . . .	195
Dative . . . . .	196
Instrumental . . . . .	197
Genitive . . . . .	198
Prepositional . . . . .	200
<i>Exercises on the dependence of words</i> . . . . .	200
CONSTRUCTION . . . . .	210

## THIRD PART

### ORTHOGRAPHY.

USE OF THE LETTERS . . . . .	212
Vowels . . . . .	212
Semi-vowels . . . . .	215
Consonants . . . . .	215
Doubling of consonants . . . . .	218
Capital letters . . . . .	219
DIVISION OF WORDS INTO SYLLABLES . . . . .	219
ORTHOGRAPHY OF ISOLATED WORDS . . . . .	220
Russian words . . . . .	220
Foreign words . . . . .	223
ORTHOGRAPHIC SIGNS . . . . .	226
MARKS OF PUNCTUATION . . . . .	227

## FOURTH PART

## PROSODY.

	Page
Division of prosody . . . . .	229
ORTHOEPY . . . . .	229
Prosodical or tonic accent . . . . .	229
Place of the accent . . . . .	230
VERSIFICATION . . . . .	231
Tonic versification . . . . .	231
Foot or metre . . . . .	231
Denomination of the verses . . . . .	232
Cæsura . . . . .	237
Termination of the verses . . . . .	238
Rhyme . . . . .	239
Stanza or strophe . . . . .	239
Poetic licenses . . . . .	240
SOLUTION OF THE EXERCISES . . . . .	241



LEIPZIG,—PRINTED BY W. DRUGULIN.

